This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

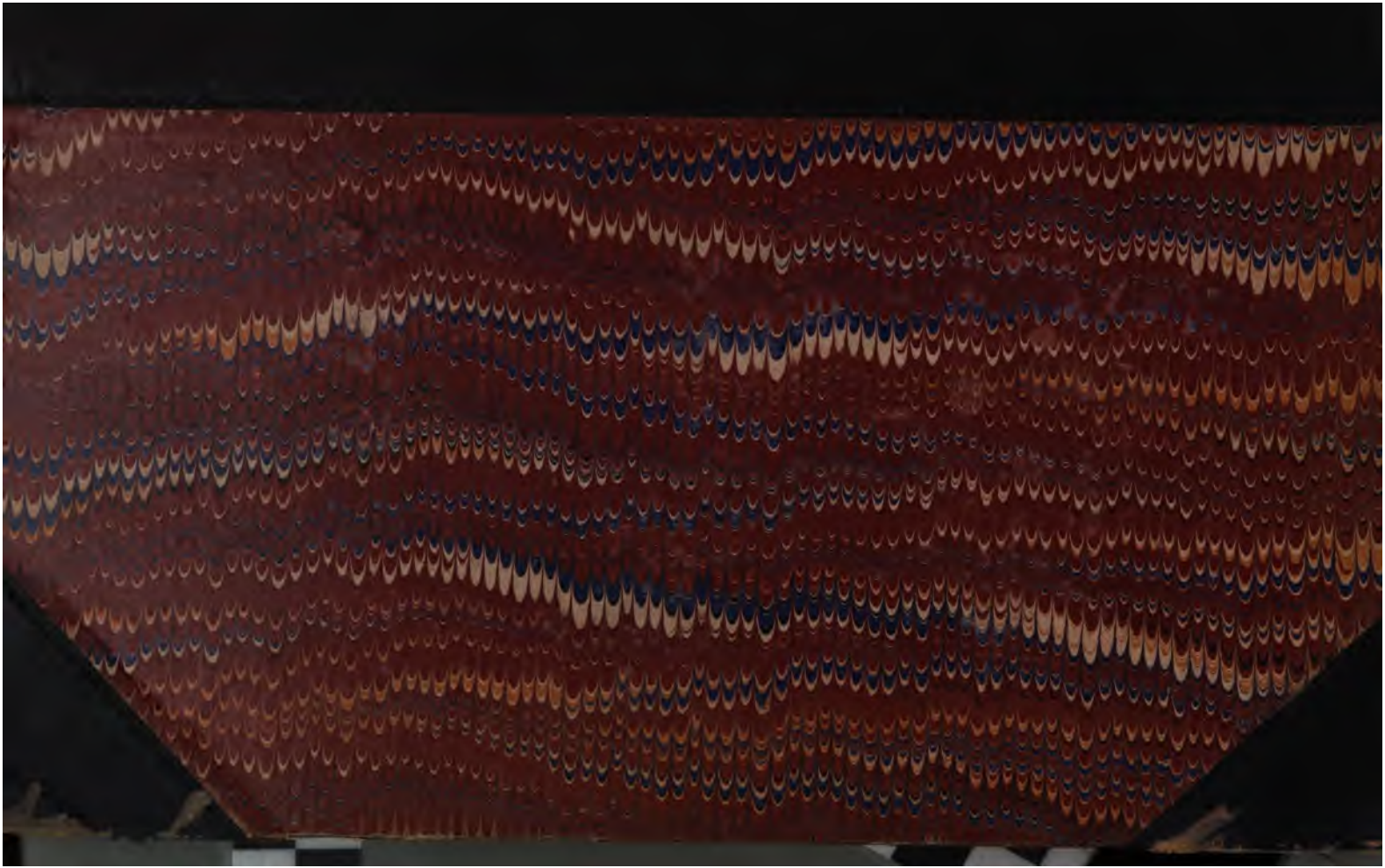
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

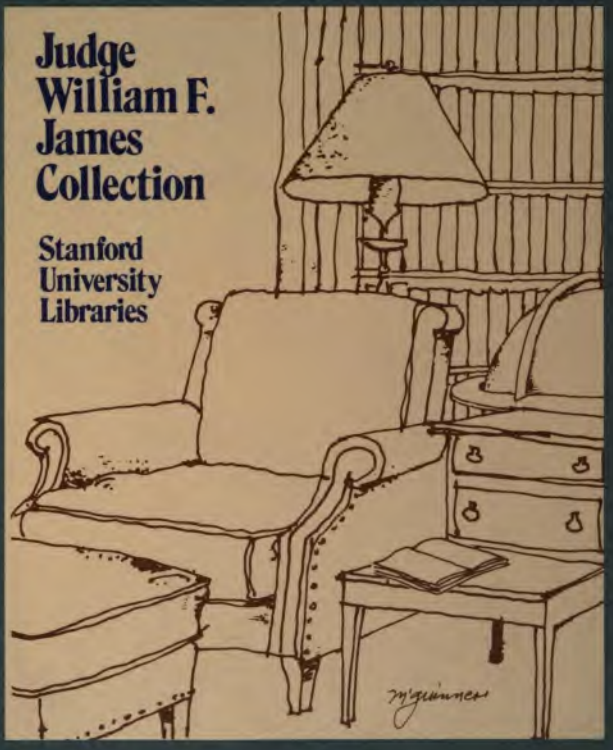
About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



Judge William F. James Collection

Stanford University Libraries



SIR JOHN FROISSART'S

CHRONICLES

OF

ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN,

AND THE

ADJOINING COUNTRIES,

FROM THE LATTER PART OF THE REIGN OF EDWARD II.
TO THE CORONATION OF HENRY IV.

NEWLY TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH EDITIONS,
WITH VARIATIONS AND ADDITIONS FROM MANY CELEBRATED MSS.

By THOMAS JOHNES.

Who so shall telle a tale after a man,
He moste rehercse, as neighe as ever he can,
Everich worde, if it be in his charge,
All speke he never so rudely and so large;
Or elles he moste tellen his tale untrewe,
Or feinen thinges, or finden wordes newe.

CHAUCER'S PROLOGUE.

THE THIRD EDITION.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,
A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR, AN ESSAY ON HIS WORKS,
A CRITICISM ON HIS HISTORY,
AND A DISSERTATION ON HIS POETRY.

VOL. XI.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, AND ORME, PATERNOSTER-ROW;
AND J. WHITE, FLEET-STREET.

1808.

L 113
F 73
1815
v. 11

Brooke, Printer, Paternoster-Row.

THE

CONTENTS

OF

THE ELEVENTH VOLUME.

CHAP. I. The King of France summons the Duke of Brittany to deliver up Sir Peter de Craon.—His Answer not being satisfactory, the King declares War against him.—The King's Uncles murmur at the great Riches of the Constable, which were disclosed by his Will - Page 1

II. The Duke of Touraine is created Duke of Orleans.—The Constable of France being recovered, the King of France advances to Mans, with the Intention of continuing his March, to make War on the Duke of Brittany - - - 6

III. The King of France, during his Stay at Mans, again sends some noble Personages to the Duke of Brittany, with Orders to dismiss Sir Peter de Craon. —The King is informed that Sir Peter is arrested at Barcelona by Command of the Queen of Arragon - - - 11

IV. The King, having left Mans to carry on his War against Brittany, is ordered to return, by an unknown Person.—This same Day, his Mind is deranged, and he is brought back to Mans - - - 17

CHAP. V. King Charles VI. of France, continuing deranged in Mind, is removed from Mans to Creil, on the Oise.—The Regency of the Kingdom is given to the Dukes of Berry and Burgundy by the three Estates - - - - 27

VI. The Lord de Coucy introduces the great Physician, Master William de Harseley, to cure the King of France.—Various Causes assigned for this Disorder - 31

VII. The Dukes of Berry and Burgundy ruin those who had been the confidential Servants of the King.—The Duke of Burgundy treats rudely the Constable de Clisson - - - - 35

VIII. Sir Oliver de Clisson, after the harsh Answer of the Duke of Burgundy, retires to Montlhery.—Being pursued thither, he has Time to make his Retreat to Chasteau Josselin - - 41

IX. The Lord de la Riviere, the principal Minister of the King of France before his Illness, is made Prisoner by Orders of the Dukes of Berry and Burgundy.—The Duchess of Berry intercedes for him with her Lord - - 45

X. After many Adjournments and Delays, the Constable de Clisson is, by Judgment of the Court of Parliament of Paris, banished the Realm of France, condemned to pay a Fine of One Hundred Thousand Francs, and declared incapable of holding the Office of Constable of France - - 54

CHAP.

CHAP. XI. King Charles recovers his Senses through the Mercy of God, and the diligent Attention of his Physician, Master William de Harseley - - - 60

XII. The Truce is prolonged between France and England. — The Viscount de Chastelbon does Homage for the County of Foix to the King of France 63

XIII. The King of France is in great Danger of his Life at a masqued Dance of Men dressed like Savages. — Pope Boniface and the Cardinals at Rome send a learned Friar to the King - 69

XIV. The Duchess of Berry supports the Lord de la Riviere, in opposition to the Duchess of Burgundy - - 78

XV. The Lord de Coucy refuses to accept the Sword of Constable in the room of Clisson.—The Dukes of Berry and Burgundy invest the Lord Philip d'Artois, count d'Eu, with it, in consideration of his Marriage with the Lady Mary of Berry, Widow of the Lord Louis de Blois - - 81

XVI. The Constable de Clisson, during his Absence from France, wages War on the Duke of Brittany - - 87

XVII. A Treaty of Peace concluded between the Kings of France and England, through the Mediations of their Uncles - - - 93

XVIII. The Treaty of Peace is nearly broken off by Pope Boniface, and by the King of France relapsing into his former Illness - - 107

CHAP. XIX. The Death of Pope Clement at Avignon.—The Election of Pope Benedict.—A learned Clerk, in the Archbishoprick of Rheims, supports the Right of the See of Avignon, by his Speeches and Preachings - - - 111

XX. The King of England is advised to make a Journey to Ireland, and to settle on the Duke of Lancaster, and his Heirs for ever, the Duchy of Aquitaine with all its Dependancies - - - 117

XXI. The Death of the Lady Anne of Bohemia, Queen of England.—The Duke of Lancaster lands in Aquitaine, and the King of England in Ireland - - 120

XXII. Sir John Froissart arrives in England, and is presented to King Richard by the Duke of York, Uncle to the King - - - 125

XXIII. The Information Froissart gains in England, touching the Opposition of the Inhabitants of Aquitaine to the Gift the King of England had made of it to his Uncle the Duke of Lancaster.—The Commissioners sent to remonstrate on the Matter with the King cannot obtain a decisive Answer relative thereto - 135

XXIV. Froissart presents his Book of Love Poems to King Richard of England.—He relates what he had heard of the last Expedition of the English to Ireland - - 153

CHAP. XXV. The Duke of Lancaster is ordered back from Aquitaine.—King Richard receives a friendly Answer to the Proposals his Ambassadors had made to the King of France for a Marriage between him and the Lady Isabella, Princess of France - - - 168

XXVI. A Squire of Normandy, called Robert the Hermit, having declared he had seen a Vision, while at Sea, ordering him to interfere in making a Peace between France and England, is sent to King Richard and his Uncles to this Effect - - - 175

XXVII. The Lord de la Riviere and Sir John le Mercier are delivered out of Prison - - 189

XXVIII. The Duke of Brittany and Sir Oliver de Clisson are reconciled.—The Dowager Queen of Sicily institutes a Law-Suit in the Courts of Paris against Sir Peter de Craon 191

XXIX. The King of Hungary writes to the King of France his Situation in respect to the Sultan Bajazet.—John of Burgundy, eldest Son to the Duke of Burgundy, marches, as Commander in Chief, an Army to the Succour of the Hungarians - - - 204

XXX. The Count d'Ostrevant, Brother-in-Law to John of Burgundy, being desirous to march to Hungary, is advised by his Father to attempt, in preference, the Re-conquest of Friesland, which belonged to them 213

CHAP. XXXI. John of Burgundy, Count of Nevers, leads an Army into Hungary against the Turks.—The Negotiations for the Marriage of King Richard of England with the eldest Princess of France are continued - - 217

XXXII. The Queen of Naples, Widow to the late Duke of Anjou, obtains Judgment in Parliament against Sir Peter de Craon - - 220

XXXIII. The Marriage is concluded between King Richard of England and the Lady Isabella, eldest Daughter to Charles VI. King of France.—The Duke of Lancaster marries again.—Sir Peter de Craon is, after some Time, delivered from Prison, at the Entreaty of the young Queen of England - - - 224

XXXIV. John of Burgundy, Count of Nevers, passes the Danube with his Army.—After the Capture of several Places, the Town of Nicopoli is besieged - - 229

XXXV. A Digression from the principal History to explain why John Galeas of Milan was moved to give the Turk Information of the Expedition intended against him 239

XXXVI. While Bajazet is raising a great Army to oppose the Hungarians and French, the Lord de Coucy, during the Siege of Nicopoli, defeats a large Body of Turks with an inferior Force - - - 248

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII. The Duke of Gueldres prevents the Earl of Derby joining the Counts of Hainault and of Ostrevant in their Expedition against Friesland.—Negotiations for Peace between France and England are continued until King Richard crosses over to Calais, to conclude them with the Duke of Burgundy - 254

XXXVIII. The Counts of Hainault and of Ostrevant raise a large Army of Men at Arms, Knights and Squires, to invade Friesland.—The King of France sends them Assistance, under the Command of Count Walleran de Saint Pol and the Lord Charles d'Albret - - 262

XXXIX. The Earl of Hainault lands with his Army in Friesland.—He defeats the Frieslanders in Battle, but is nevertheless forced to retire to Holland, to pass the Winter, without having gained any thing in Friesland 270

XL. The Ceremony of the Marriage of the King of England with a Princess of France.—The King of France delivers her to the King of England, in his Tent between Ardres and Calais - - - - 280

CHAP. XLI. The Christians are forced to raise the Siege of Nicopoli, by the Arrival of Bajazet in Turkey.—They are defeated, and the Hungarians put to Flight, through the presumptuous Folly of the French - - 291

XLII. The Turks, after the Battle of Nicopoli, put to Death all their Prisoners, except the Count de Nevers and some other great Lords 301

XLIII. The French and others who had been in Turkey suffer great Hardships on their Return home, after having escaped from the Battle of Nicopoli.—Sir James de Helly brings certain Intelligence of this Defeat to the King of France - - 310

XLIV. Sir James de Helly, having received his Dispatches from the King of France, arrives in Hungary, in his Way to Turkey.—The King sends Sir John de Chastelmorant, with Presents to Bajazet, and his Recommendations in favour of the French Prisoners.—The Manner in which they are treated - - 315

XLV. Sir James de Helly, on his Return to Turkey, obtains his Liberty, and carries a Passport from the Sultan to Sir John de Chastelmorant in Hungary.—Sir John de Chastelmorant is forced to send a Messenger to the King of France, to inform him that the King of Hungary will not allow the Presents to be carried to the Sultan - - 322

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVI. The Duchess of Orleans is suspected of causing the King's Illness - 330

XLVII. The Duke and Duchess of Burgundy diligently exert themselves to find Means to ransom the Count de Nevers, their Son, and his Fellow-Prisoners in Turkey.—The King of Hungary, through the Persuasion of the Grand Master of Rhodes, permits the Ambassador from the King of France to pass through his Kingdom with the Presents for the Sultan Bajazet - 333

XLVIII. The Duke of Glocester plots the Destruction of his Nephew the King of England.—The King, having Information of his Practices, has him arrested by the Earl Marshal - - - 338

XLIX. The Lord de Coucy and the Count d'Eu, Constable of France, die in Turkey, before the Treaty for their Deliverance is arranged.—A Ransom is agreed on for the other Prisoners who were taken at the Battle of Nicopoli - - 365

THE

CHRONICLES

OF

ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN, &c.

CHAP. I.

THE KING OF FRANCE SUMMONS THE DUKE OF BRITTANY TO DELIVER UP SIR PETER DE CRAON.—HIS ANSWER NOT BEING SATISFACTORY, THE KING DECLARES WAR AGAINST HIM.—THE KING'S UNCLES MURMUR AT THE GREAT RICHES OF THE CONSTABLE, WHICH WERE DISCLOSED BY HIS WILL.

INTELLIGENCE was brought to the king of France ſome days after the aſſaſſination of the conſtable, that the duke of Brittany had received ſir Peter de Craon. His moſt confidential counſellors adviſed him to ſend inſtantly to the duke of Brittany, and ſummon him, on his faith and homage, ſhould that falſe traitor to the crown of France, ſir Peter de Craon, be in any parts of Brittany, to arreſt him and ſend him without delay to France.

When theſe letters were written and ſealed, they were given to one of the king's meſſengers, who ſet out for Brittany, and found the duke at his caſtle of Ermine, near Vannes. The duke, having received and read the letters, told the meſſenger he would write an anſwer to the king. The ſubſtance of it was, that he excuſed himſelf from knowing any thing of ſir Peter de Craon, or where he was; nor did he wiſh to know any thing, for it was no concern of his; and that, as to ſir Peter's hatred and quarrel with ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, it no way touched or regarded him, and he entreated the king to hold him excuſed. When this anſwer had been properly drawn up and ſealed, it was given to the meſſenger, who returned with it to Paris. The king and his council were impatient to receive the duke's anſwer; and, when the letters were delivered to the king, he attentively read them, and turning to his brother, the duke of Touraine, and the council, ſaid, 'This is not ſatisfactory.' Others replied, that the duke of Brittany was at the bottom of the whole miſchief. The king and the duke of Touraine declared, that ſuch an outrage was too great to be lightly paſſed over, and was a direct attack on the royal majeſty of France.

The duke of Berry was at this time in Paris, and, in his frequent viſits to the palace, the king talked much to him concerning the crime of ſir Peter de Craon. The duke replied; 'My lord, he has certainly committed a great outrage; and, if it were known where he was, I would adviſe that

that he be arreſted and puniſhed for it.' 'Good uncle,' ſaid the king, 'he is now with the duke in Brittany, and nowhere elſe: we are determined to march thither, and you ſhall accompany us.' The duke of Berry aſſented, though he was diſſembling his real ſentiments, and added, 'My lord, we muſt have our good brother of Burgundy alſo with us.' 'We will have him,' replied the king, 'for we will not go without him; and our army ſhall be of ſtrength ſufficient to conquer all our enemies. We now clearly ſee, that this duke of Brittany neither loves nor eſteems us. Good uncle, he is very proud and preſumptuous; and we will not attend to any other affair until we have brought him to reaſon.' Thus did the king and the duke of Berry converſe together: the duke aſſented to every thing his nephew propoſed, though determined, in his own mind, to act in oppoſition to it.

The king of France was too earneſt in his deſire to revenge the inſult offered his conſtable, and was daily preſſing forward the preparations for his expedition to Brittany. He was to march firſt into Anjou, to deſtroy all the caſtles and poſſeſſions held there by ſir Peter de Craon, notwithſtanding the duke of Brittany claimed them for his own by purchaſe. The king and his council anſwered, that he had never had poſſeſſion given him of them; and that, from having ſupported and protected ſir Peter de Craon, he had incurred perſonally the indignation of the crown of France, although a marriage had this ſeaſon been formed between the ſon of the duke and a princeſs of France.

While theſe preparations were going forward, and the rumour of the king's expedition againſt Brittany was every where talked of in France, the biſhop of Noyon and the lord de la Riviere returned to Paris, having fulfilled their miſſion to Bearn and Foix. They related to the king and council what they had done; but the affairs of Brittany occupied ſo entirely the time of the council, that they could not attend to any thing elſe; and the king was impatient for the conſtable to be ſufficiently recovered to mount his horſe.

Before the king left Paris, he commanded the very handſome hôtel ſir Peter de Craon had, near the church-yard of St. John, to be razed to the ground, and the ſpot given for an addition to the church-yard. The king ordered large proviſion of ſtores to be made on the roads to Anjou, Maine, Touraine, Brittany, and along the banks of the Loire, ready for his intended expedition; for no one dared make any oppoſition to it.

It was well known in Paris, and likewiſe in different parts of the country, that ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, conſtable of France, had made his will, in order that, in caſe of death from his wounds, his heirs might know where to ſeek for his wealth. He had but two children, both females, one married to John of Brittany, count de Penthievre, whom he had ranſomed from England for ſix ſcore thouſand francs paid to the duke of Ireland, as has been related. His other daughter was, or would be, viſcounteſs de Rohan, in right of her huſband. The whole of his money and moveable property,

property, without including any part of his heritage, amounted to ſeventeen hundred thouſand francs, to the great aſtoniſhment of all who heard it, as to the means by which he had been able to amaſs ſo large a ſum. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, in particular, were much ſurpriſed, as well as their councils, for the conſtable was not any way in favour with them; ſo that, when among themſelves, they thus ſpoke very freely on the ſubject: 'How the devil can this conſtable have collected ſuch an immenſe ſum of florins, and ſuch ſplendid furniture? The king of France has nothing like it. We muſt ſuppoſe that it has not been lawfully acquired.' This paſſed off; but thoſe who hated him did not think the leſs of it.

The king was ſtill at Paris, though his preparations were ready; and all who had been ſummoned to accompany the expedition to Brittany were aſſembling accordingly. The duke of Burgundy was, however, much vexed at this war, ſaying it was made without reaſon, and would end badly; for neither France nor Brittany, nor their knights and ſquires, were any way concerned in the quarrel between ſir Oliver de Cliſſon and ſir Peter de Craon; nor had they any buſineſs to make war on their account, but ſhould let them fight it out themſelves, without thus deſtroying and haraſſing the poor of both countries. The duke of Berry was of the ſame opinion; but they could not be heard, for the king had other counſellors to whom he liſtened in preference. They knew not, therefore, how to prevent the war from taking

place, and, when they ſaw the king was obſtinately bent upon it, they obeyed, but as ſlowly as they could. I heard, and believe it true, that, through the intervention of the duke of Burgundy, the count d'Oſtrevant was ſummoned by the king of France to attend him with three hundred lances: the count, who loved arms, made his preparations, and ſummoned his vaſſals, but, when he had compleated every thing at a great expenſe, he received counter-orders, not to ſtir.

CHAP. II.

THE DUKE OF TOURAINE IS CREATED DUKE OF ORLEANS.—THE CONSTABLE OF FRANCE BEING RECOVERED, THE KING OF FRANCE ADVANCES TO MANS, WITH THE INTENTION OF CONTINUING HIS MARCH, TO MAKE WAR ON THE DUKE OF BRITTANY.

WHEN all things were ready for the king's departure from Paris, an exchange of lands was made between the king and the duke of Touraine, but this exchange was greatly in favour of the duke; for he ſurrendered to his brother the duchy of Touraine and its dependancies, receiving, in return, the duchy of Orleans, which was of four times the value, on the ſame terms and conditions that

that Philip, duke of Orleans, had formerly held it. We ſhall henceforward call him duke of Orleans.

The king was ſo pleaſed when ſir Oliver de Cliſſon had recovered from his wounds ſufficiently to ride that he ſaid he would now ſet out from Paris to Brittany, to ſhew he made the quarrel his own. In conſequence, he and the duke of Orleans took leave of the queen, the ducheſs, and the others ladies and damſels who were at the hôtel de Saint Pol, and went that night to the houſe of his miniſter, Montagu, where they ſupped and lay. The duke of Bourbon, the count de Namur and the lord de Coucy, went with them. I know not if they all lay there, but the king did ſo and dined there on the morrow. In the afternoon, he departed in handſome array, and ſupped and lay at St. Germain-en-laye, where he remained ſeveral days. At this period, according to the report of his phyſicians, the king's health was not good; but, he was ſo impatient to carry on the war, he declared his health was better than theirs. This he ſaid to puſh forward the buſineſs; for his two uncles of Berry and Burgundy were ſtill behind, and ſhewed clearly the expedition was contrary to their opinion, and that willingly they would avoid going with him. They had, however, iſſued ſummons to their vaſſals, for they were bound in honour to accompany the king.

When the king had ſojourned at St. Germain for fifteen days, and the different lords were arrived, or on the road, he was adviſed to depart. He did ſo, croſſed the Seine, and marching for

Chartres, arrived at Auneau, a good town and handſome caſtle, that belonged to the lord de la Riviere in right of his wife. In company with him were the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon. The lord de la Riviere received the king and theſe lords very magnificently, as he was well able to do, and they remained his gueſts for three days. On the fourth day they departed, and went to Chartres, of which place the brother of Montagu was biſhop. The king, the duke of Orleans, and the duke of Bourbon were lodged in the epiſcopal palace. On the ſecond day, the duke of Berry, and the count de la Marche came there; but the duke of Burgundy was ſtill behind. He had begun his journey, and on the fourth day arrived, to the great joy of the king. Men at arms were pouring in from all quarters; and the king ſaid he would never return to Paris until he had made this duke of Brittany liſten to reaſon, who had ſo often given him plague and vexation. There were too many about the king, who urged him on; ſo that the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who wiſhed for more moderate counſels, were not attended to. This created a diſguſt in them and their adviſers; and they ſaid among themſelves, that public affairs could not long remain in their preſent hazardous and unſettled circumſtances, and that the king was cutting out for himſelf and kingdom work enough, when he rejected the advice of his uncles and liſtened to others of little weight.

After ſtaying about ſeven days in Chartres, he departed for Mans. He was followed by men

at

at arms from Artois, Beauvais, Vermandois and Picardy, and other diſtant countries. They ſaid when together,—'How comes this duke of Brittany to give us ſo much trouble. He is full of pride, and has never been truly affectionate to the crown of France. If it had not been for his couſin, the late earl of Flanders, who ſupported him, and the ducheſs of Burgundy, who does ſo at this moment, he would long ago have been deſtroyed. He never could bear the lord de Cliſſon from the moment he quitted the Engliſh party, and is greatly to blame now in aſſiſting ſir Peter de Craon againſt the king and the conſtable.' Others replied,—'Let the king alone; for he has taken this buſineſs ſo much to heart, he will make the duke repent of it before he return.' 'That he will,' ſaid others, 'if there be no treachery in his way. Do you ſuppoſe that all who now accompany him are enemies to the duke of Brittany? Certainly not; for, whatever they may dare ſay, they ſhew their intentions too openly by their actions. They are plotting night and day how they may prevent this expedition, and they haraſs the king ſo much, it well be well if he keep his health.'

Such were the converſations of the men at arms on their march, following the king to Maine. The king, on his arrival at Mans, was lodged in the caſtle, and his lords in the town as well as the ſtate of its accommodations would allow. The army ſpread themſelves baroad in the plains, which were

were rich and good lodging for men at arms. The king and his court remained in the city of Mans upwards of three weeks, for the king was in a very feveriſh ſtate and unfit to ride.

The phyſicians told the duke of Orleans and his uncles, that the king was oppreſſed with too much buſineſs, and was not in a ſituation to go through it; that reſt and quiet were abſolutely neceſſary, for that ever ſince he had left Amiens after the conferences, his health had not been ſo good as it was formerly. The king's uncles remonſtrated on all this with the council, for the king would not pay any attention to what the phyſicians ſaid; and he was ſo impatient to carry the war into Brittany, he told his uncles, that he was always better when on horſeback, than when doing nothing, and added, 'Whoever adviſes me to the contrary will highly diſpleaſe me, and ſhew he has not any love for me.' This was all the anſwer he would give. Every day there was a council holden, which laſted until noon, or beyond it; and the king would always be preſent, to check any delays being made to the expedition into Brittany.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

THE KING OF FRANCE, DURING HIS STAY AT MANS, AGAIN SENDS SOME NOBLE PERSONAGES TO THE DUKE OF BRITTANY, WITH ORDERS TO DISMISS SIR PETER DE CRAON.—THE KING IS INFORMED THAT SIR PETER IS ARRESTED AT BARCELONA BY COMMAND OF THE QUEEN OF ARRAGON.

THE king was adviſed, during his ſtay at Mans, to which he aſſented, out of affection for his uncles, to ſend four knights to Brittany. They were to remonſtrate ſtrongly with the duke, on the part of the king and council, how greatly he had miſbehaved by affording an aſylum to an enemy of the king and realm; and that, if he were deſirous to acknowledge his fault, and make amends for it, he muſt ſend ſir Peter de Craon to Mans, when they would endeavour to make his peace with the king, and prevent this expedition from doing harm to him or to his country.

According to what I heard, ſir Reginald de Roye, the lord de Varenciers, the lord de Château-morant and ſir Taupin de Cantemelle, governor of Giſors, were ordered on this miſſion. They left the city of Mans with forty lances, and, having paſſed through Angers, journeyed on to Nantes, when, having entered the town, they found there the duke. He gave them a good welcome,

come, and entertained them with a ſplendid dinner; but, before this, they had fulfilled their commiſſion, and had ably explained to him the object of their coming, and what the king and council had ordered them to ſay. The duke anſwered prudently and nobly, 'that he would be moſt happy to arreſt and give up to the king ſir Peter de Craon, but, as God might help him, he neither knew where he was, nor what he was about: he therefore entreated theſe lords to make his peace, for he had aſſured them of the truth,' adding, 'he had heard, upwards of a year ago, ſir Peter de Craon declare, that ſir Oliver de Cliſſon hated him ſo mortally, he would attack him the firſt favourable opportunity, with all the force he could muſter, let the event be what it would. When he told me this, I aſked if he had notified this to ſir Oliver: he ſaid he had, and had ſent him his defiance, adding, that he would put him to death, by day or night, the very firſt time he met him. I know nothing further of the matter, and am ſurpriſed that my lord ſhould think of making war on me for this cauſe. Begging his pardon, I do not feel that I am any way ſo blameable, either towards him or the kingdom of France, that war ſhould be declared againſt me; for never will I infringe, if it pleaſe God, the alliances that have been entered into between us, as well in regard to the marriage of our children, as reſpecting other matters.'

This was the anſwer the French knights received the duke of Brittany; and, when they had dined

dined with him, and remained one day more at Nantes, they took leave, and ſet out on their return the way they had come.

The king and council were impatient for their arrival, to hear the duke's anſwer. What you have juſt heard, the knights repeated to the king, and to thoſe intereſted, from the duke of Brittany. The dukes of Berry and Burguudy were well ſatisfied with it, and would have perſuaded others to be ſo likewiſe, ſaying the anſwer was proper and reaſonable. But the king declared that, from the information he had received, he was of a contrary opinion, and ſince he was come ſo far, he would never return to Paris until he had humbled the duke of Brittany.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy would willingly have altered this declaration, had they known how, but they were not attended to; and the king had taken ſuch a hatred to ſir Peter de Craon, whom he ſaid the duke of Brittany ſecreted in his country, that no excuſes were of avail.

There was a report at Mans, and in many other places of France, that the lady Jolande de Bar, queen of Arragon, and couſin-german to the king of France, had thrown into the priſons of Barcelona, a knight who was unknown to her or to her people; and, from his refuſal to tell his name, he was thought to be ſir Peter de Craon. The queen of Arragon, wiſhing to pleaſe the king, wrote to him in the moſt friendly terms, to ſay,—'that on the fifth day of July a knight, with a handſome

handſome array, had come to Barcelona, with intent to croſs the ſea; that he had hired, at a very dear rate, a veſſel to carry him, as he ſaid, to Naples. Having had all our ports well guarded, ſo that no ſtranger could leave them without permiſſion, and this knight refuſing to ſay who he was, we have detained him in priſon. We ſuppoſe, from the great anxiety he ſhews for his liberty, that he is the knight you are ſeeking for, and on whoſe account you have written to us. Have the goodneſs, therefore, to ſend hither, as ſpeedily as may be, ſome perſons who are acquainted with ſir Peter de Craon; for he whom we hold in priſon ſhall not be ſet at liberty until we have heard from you. We ſhall learn with pleaſure that the intelligence we have ſent has been agreeable to you and to your council. May the Holy Spirit have you in his keeping! Written at Perpignan the ninth day of July,' and ſigned 'Jolande de Bar, queen of Arragon and Majorca, lady of Sardinia.' The ſuperſcription was, 'To our very redoubted lord the king of France.'

This intelligence ſoftened the hearts of many, and the expedition was on the point of being broken off; but the friends of the conſtable thought this was an invented ſtory, to prevent the king advancing further; and that ſir Peter de Craon was in danger of no other priſon than what the duke of Brittany pleaſed, for he was ſafely in refuge within his duchy. The king paid no attention to this letter, ſaying it was all deceit; but the duke of Burgundy replied,—'At leaſt, my lord,

to

to ſatisfy my niece of Arragon, who has written to you, and to deliver this knight, if he be guiltleſs, condeſcend to ſend ſome one thither, that our couſin may not be diſpleaſed with you and with us. 'We are very willing to do ſo, good uncle, ſaid the king, for I wiſh not to vex you. Let ſome perſons be ſent to Barcelona; but I am firmly perſuaded that the traitor, Peter de Craon, is not there, nor in any priſon but the duke of Brittany's palace; and I ſwear, by the faith I owe St. Denis, that one day he ſhall ſeverely pay for it.'

Nothing could alter the king's opinion that ſir Peter de Craon was in Brittany. The duke of Brittany received regular information of what was paſſing, and, as the king was ſo much enraged againſt him, was not well ſatisfied of his ſecurity; for he ſaw that the dukes of Berry and Burgundy had no weight in the council, and that the party of his adverſary, Cliſſon, led the king juſt as they pleaſed. He had his caſtles and towns moſt ſtrictly guarded; but, unfortunately for him, there were no towns or caſtles he dared truſt his perſon to, excepting Vannes, Campel, Dol, Quimperlé, Ermine, Quimper-corentin and Succinio. He had written to the knights and barons of Brittany, from whom he looked for ſupport and advice, but they all diſſembled with him, ſeeing the king, their lord paramount, ſo wroth againſt him, and from his ſo openly taking the part of ſir Peter de Craon againſt the king and the conſtable, which was very indecent. He almoſt repented what he had

had done; but, his ſpirit was ſo lofty, he diſdained to own it, and he ſaid to himſelf,—'If the king, as he ſeems now inclined, enter Brittany with his army, I will not, at the beginning, make any oppoſition, that I may ſee who are my friends and enemies, nor will I hurry myſelf to retaliate; but, when he ſhall think himſelf in full ſecurity, I will fall upon him, ſince there is no other way of obtaining peace.'

Thus did the duke counſel with himſelf, and at times with his miniſters; for he concluded that a war with France was now inevitable. It was not ſo, however, for matters turned out otherwiſe than he expected, to his great advantage. The old proverb ſays, 'He is not poor who is lucky.' The duke of Brittany was wonderous fortunate at this ſeaſon, from an aſtoniſhing and pitiable accident that befel the king of France. Nothing leſs could have withdrawn from him the dangers he was ſurrounded by, and permitted him the enjoyment of peace.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

THE KING, HAVING LEFT MANS TO CARRY ON HIS WAR AGAINST BRITTANY, IS ORDERED TO RETURN, BY AN UNKNOWN PERSON.—THIS SAME DAY, HIS MIND IS DERANGED, AND HE IS BROUGHT BACK TO MANS.

WHEN the king of France had reſided about three weeks in the city of Mans, during which time councils were daily held, and when the knights were returned with the duke of Brittany's anſwer, as you have heard; the king ſaid, that ſince he knew what to depend on, he would not longer ſtay at Mans, for it was diſpleaſing and hurtful to him, but advance towards the frontiers of Brittany, nearer this duke, who was ſupporting the traitor, ſir Peter de Craon.

The intention of the king was to deprive the duke of Brittany of his duchy, and nominate a governor of it, until his children ſhould be of age to have it reſtored to them, but the preſent duke was to be driven thence; and, this determination was ſo firmly rooted in his mind, nothing could make him change it. He ſet out from Mans between nine and ten o'clock in the morning; and the lords and others who had been quartered there, prepared to follow him, after they had heard maſs and drank a cup. He had, the evening before, ſent for the marſhals of his army to his chamber, and

ordered them to have the men at arms ready by early morn to march to Angers; 'for,' he added, 'we have determined never to return from Brittany, until we ſhall have deſtroyed the traitors who give us ſo much trouble.'

The marſhals gave their orders for the army to march on the morrow, and aſſured the captains that it was now determined upon to purſue the road to Brittany. The day the king left Mans was exceſſively hot, as was to be expected, for it was the middle of Auguſt, when the ſun is in its greateſt force.

You muſt know, in order perhaps to account truly for what followed, that the king, during his ſtay at Mans, laboured hard and aſſiduouſly in the council, where he had but little aſſiſtance, and was beſide not perfectly recovered in health. He had been the whole ſummer feeble in body and mind, ſcarcely eating or drinking any thing, and almoſt daily attacked with fever, to which he was naturally inclined, and this was increaſed by any contradiction or fatigue. He ſuffered much from the inſult offered his conſtable, ſo that his phyſicians and uncles noticed that at times his intellects were deranged; but they could not do any thing, for he would not liſten to what they propoſed, nor would he conſent, on any account, to defer the expedition to Brittany.

I was told that a ſtrange accident happened to him as he was riding through the foreſt of Mans, for which he ought to have aſſembled his council, inſtead of purſuing his march farther. A man,

bare

bare headed with naked feet, clothed in a jerkin of white ruſſet, that ſhewed he was more mad than otherwiſe, ruſhed out from among the trees, and boldly ſeized the reins of the king's horſe. Having thus ſtopped him, he ſaid, 'King, ride no further, but return, for thou art betrayed.' This ſpeech made ſuch an impreſſion on the king's mind, which was weak, that his underſtanding was ſhaken.

As the man finiſhed his ſpeech, the men at arms advanced and beat him ſoundly on his hands, which made him drop the reins. They ſuffered him to run off, without paying attention to what he had ſaid, thinking he was ſome madman, for which they were by many afterwards greatly blamed and diſgraced: they ought at leaſt to have arreſted him, to have examined if he were really mad, and to learn why he had uttered ſuch words, and whence he had come. Nothing, however, was done, and he made off by their rear, and was never after ſeen by any who had the leaſt knowledge of him. Thoſe who were near the king's perſon heard very plainly the words he had ſpoken.

The king and his army paſſed on; and it might be about twelve o'clock when they were clear of the foreſt. They now entered an extenſive ſandy plain; and the ſun was ſo reſplendent, and in ſuch force, that ſcarcely any could endure the heat: the horſes, conſequently, ſuffered much. There were none ſo uſed to arms as not to complain of the oppreſſive heat; and the lords took different routes, apart from each other. The king rode by

himſelf, to have leſs duſt; and the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, converſing together, kept on his left hand, at about two acres diſtance from him.

The other lords, ſuch as the count de la Marche, ſir James de Bourbon, ſir Charles d'Albret, ſir Philip d'Artois, ſir Henry and ſir Philip de Bar, ſir Peter de Navarre, rode in different paths. The duke of Bourbon, the lord de Coucy, ſir Charles d'Angers, the baron d'Ivry, were following at a gentle pace, talking together, and ſome diſtance from the king, not ſuſpecting the misfortune which was on the point of befalling him. It was manifeſtly the work of God, whoſe puniſhments are ſevere, to make his creatures tremble. Have we not ſeen many ſimilar examples, both in the Old and the New Teſtament, eſpecially in the inſtance of Nebuchadnezzar, king of the Aſſyrians? He reigned over them with ſuch power, that nothing was ſpoken of but his magnificence and glory; when ſuddenly, in the midſt of his pomp, the Lord of kings, God, the Maſter of heaven and earth, and Creator of all things, ſtruck him in ſuch wiſe that he loſt his ſenſes and his kingdom. He contiuned for ſeven years in this deplorable ſtate, living on acorns and wild fruits, having the taſte of a wild boar or hog. After this period of penitence, God reſtored to him his ſenſes and memory; upon which he declared to Daniel, the ſervant of the Lord, that there was none other god but the God of Iſrael.

To ſpeak truly, God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghoſt, three in name, but one in ſubſtance, was, is and ever will be, of as ſufficient power to declare his works as from the beginning, and one ought not, therefore, to be ſurpriſed at whatever wonderful things happen. The reaſon why I thus ſpeak is, that a great influence from Heaven this day fell on the king of France, and, as ſome ſay, from his own fault. The phyſicians of his body, who ought to have known well his conſtitution, declared, that conſidering the weak ſtate of his health, he ſhould not have thus expoſed himſelf to the heat of the day, but have rode in the cool of the mornings or evenings. Thoſe who had adviſed otherwiſe were diſgraced; but he had been long led by his miniſters to act juſt as they pleaſed.

The king rode over this ſandy plain, that reflected the heat, which was much greater than had been ever before known or felt in that ſeaſon: he was beſides dreſſed in a jacket of black velvet that added to the warmth, and had only a ſingle hood of crimſon, ornamented with a chaplet of large beautiful pearls the queen had preſented to him on his leaving her. He was followed by one of his pages, who had a montauban cap of poliſhed ſteel on his head that glittered in the ſun, and behind him another page rode on horſeback, carrying a vermilion-coloured lance, enveloped with ſilk for the king, the head of which lance was broad, ſharp and bright. The lord de la Riviere had brought a dozen ſuch when he laſt came from

Toulouſe, and this was one; for he had preſented the whole to the king, who had given three to the duke of Orleans, and the ſame number to the duke of Burgundy.

As they were thus riding, the pages, who were but children, grew negligent of themſelves and their horſes; and the one who bore the lance fell aſleep, and, forgetful of what he had in his hand, let it fall on the caſque of the page before him, which made both the lance and caſque ring loudly. The king, being ſo near, (the pages rode almoſt on the heels of his horſe,) was ſtartled and ſhuddered; for he had in his mind the words the wiſe man or fool had ſpoken when he ſeized his horſe's reins in the foreſt of Mans, and fancied a hoſt of enemies were come to ſlay him.

In this diſtraction of mind, he drew his ſword, and advanced on the pages, for his ſenſes were quite gone, and imagined himſelf ſurrounded by enemies, giving blows of his ſword, indifferent on whom they fell, and bawled out, 'Advance! advance on theſe traitors.' The pages, ſeeing the king thus wroth, took care of themſelves, for they imagined they had angered him by their negligence, and ſpurred their horſes different ways. The duke of Orleans was not far diſtant from the king, who made up to him with his drawn ſword, for at that moment his frenzy had deprived him of the means of knowing either his brother or uncles. The duke of Orleans, ſeeing him approach with his naked ſword, grew alarmed, and, ſpurring his horſe, made off and the king after him. The duke of Burgundy, hearing the cries of the

pages,

pages, caſt his eyes to that quarter, and ſeeing the king purſuing his brother with his drawn ſword, was thunderſtruck, and not without reaſon: he cried out for help, ſaying,—'My lord has loſt his ſenſes: for God's ſake lay hands on him:' and then added, 'Fly, fair nephew of Orleans: fly, or my lord will murder you.' The duke of Orleans was much frightened, and galloped as faſt as his horſe could go, followed by knights and ſquires. There were now great ſhoutings, inſomuch that thoſe at a diſtance thought they were hunting a wolf or hare until they learnt it was the king, who was not himſelf.

The duke of Orleans, however, eſcaped by making ſeveral turns, and was aided by knights, ſquires and men at arms, who ſurrounded the king, and allowed him to waſte his ſtrength on them; for, of courſe, the more he exerted himſelf, the weaker he grew. When he made a blow at any one knight or ſquire, they fell before the ſtroke, and I never heard that in this fit of madneſs any one was killed. Several were ſtruck down by his blows, becauſe no one made any defence. At laſt, when he was quite jaded and running down with ſweat, and his horſe in a lather from fatigue, a Norman knight, who was one of his chamberlains, and much beloved by him, called ſir William Martel, came behind, and caught him in his arms, though he had his ſword ſtill in his hand. When he was thus held, all the other lords came up, and took the ſword from him: he was diſmounted, and gently laid on the ground, that his

jacket might be ſtripped from him, to give him more air and cool him.

His three uncles and brother approached; but he had loſt all knowledge of them, ſhewing no ſymptoms of acquaintance or affection, but rolled his eyes round in his head without ſpeaking to any one. The princes of the blood were in amazement, and knew not what to ſay nor how to act. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy at length ſaid, 'We muſt return to Mans, for the expedition is at an end for this ſeaſon.' They did not then ſay all they thought; but they made their intentions very apparent to thoſe who were not in their good graces, on their return to Paris, as I ſhall relate in the courſe of this hiſtory.

It muſt be owned, that when all things are conſidered, it was a great pity for a king of France, who is the moſt noble and powerful prince in the world, to be thus ſuddenly deprived of his ſenſes. There could not be any remedy applied, nor any amendment expected, ſince God willed it ſhould be ſo.

Having undreſſed and cooled him as gently as they could, they laid him on a litter, and carried him ſlowly to Mans. The marſhals inſtantly ſent orders for the van to return, and the whole army was informed there was an end to the expedition. To ſome, the reaſons were told why it was thus put an end to, to others not. The evening the king was brought back to Mans, his phyſicians were much occupied with him, and the princes of his blood in the utmoſt trouble. The event was ſpoken of

of very differently: ſome ſaid that the king, to ruin the kingdom of France, had been poiſoned, or bewitched, the morning before he left Mans. Theſe words were ſo often repeated, that they came to the ears of the duke of Orleans and others of the blood-royal. In converſation together, they ſaid, —'Do you hear, (for you muſt, unleſs you ſhut your ears) what murmurings there are againſt the king's miniſters? It is reported, and commonly believed, that he has been poiſoned or bewitched: now, how can we know whether this has been done or not?' Some made anſwer, 'From his phyſicians, for they muſt know his habit and conſtitution.' The phyſicians were ſent for, and moſt ſtrictly examined by the duke of Burgundy. To this examination they replied, 'that the king had, for a long time, been ſuffering under this diſorder; and, knowing that this weakneſs of intellect oppreſſed him grievouſly, it would make its appearance.'

The duke of Burgundy told the phyſicians, 'that in the whole of the matter they had honeſtly acquitted themſelves, but that the king, from his great anxiety to undertake this war, would not liſten to any advice on the ſubject of his health. Curſed be this expedition, and unhappy is it that ever it was propoſed, for it has been his deſtruction; and it would have been better that Cliſſon and his whole race had been murdered, than that the king had been afflicted with ſuch a diſorder. News of it will be carried every where, and, as he is now but a young man, we who are his uncles, and of his blood, who ſhould have adviſed him, ſhall be much blamed,

blamed, though we have been no way in fault. Now tell us,' ſaid the duke, addreſſing himſelf to the phyſicians, 'were you preſent yeſterday morning at his dinner before he mounted his horſe?' 'Yes, in God's name were we,' ſaid they. 'And what did he eat and drink?' 'So very little, that it is ſcarcely worth mentioning; for he ſat muſing the whole time.' 'And who was the perſon that laſt ſerved him with liquor?' aſked the duke. 'That we know not, ſaid the phyſicians; 'for as ſoon as the table was removed, we went away to make ourſelves ready for riding, but you will learn it from his butlers or chamberlains.' Robert Tulles, a ſquire from Normandy, and head butler, was called. On his coming, he was queſtioned who had ſerved the king with wine. He replied, 'My lords, ſir Robert de Lignac.' The knight was then ſent for, and aſked where he had taken the wine to ſerve the king the morning before he mounted his horſe. 'My lords,' ſaid he, 'here is Robert Tulles who gave it me, and taſted it, as well as myſelf, in the king's preſence.' 'That is true,' added Robert Tulles; 'and in this reſpect there ſhall not be the ſmalleſt ground for ſuſpicions; for there is now ſome of the very ſame in bottles to what the king drank, which we will open and drink before you.'

The duke of Berry then ſaid,—'We are debating here about nothing: the king is only poiſoned or bewitched by bad adviſers, but it is not time at preſent to talk of theſe matters. Let us bear the misfortune as well as we can for the moment.'

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

KING CHARLES VI. OF FRANCE, CONTINUING DERANGED IN MIND, IS REMOVED FROM MANS TO CREIL, ON THE OISE.—THE REGENCY OF THE KINGDOM IS GIVEN TO THE DUKES OF BERRY AND BURGUNDY BY THE THREE ESTATES.

ON the concluſion of the duke of Berry's ſpeech, the lords retired to their lodgings for the night; and the king's uncles ordered four knights of honour to ſit up with the king, to attend him quietly, and adminiſter to his wants. They were ſir Reginald de Roye, ſir Reignald de Trie, the lord de Garencieres and ſir William Martel. The lord de la Riviere, ſir John le Mercier, Montagu, the bègue de Villaines, ſir William des Bordes and ſir Helion de Lignac, were ordered not to interfere in any manner of buſineſs until the king ſhould be perfectly recovered. On receiving this order, they departed, and others took charge of the government.

On the morrow morning the king's uncles viſited him: they found him very weak, and aſked how he had ſlept? His chamberlains replied, 'Very little: he cannot reſt.' 'This is ſad news,' ſaid the duke of Burgundy. All three then approached him; and by this time the duke of Orleans arrived, and aſked him how he was? He made no anſwer, but ſtared at them without recollecting who

who they were. Theſe lords were much ſhocked, and, converſing together, ſaid,—'We need not ſtay longer, for he is extremely ill, and we do him more harm than good by our preſence. We have ordered his chamberlains and phyſicians to take every care of him, which of courſe they will do. Let us conſider how the kingdom is to be governed, for a government muſt ſpeedily be provided, or all things will go ill.' 'Good brother,' ſaid the duke of Burgundy to the duke of Berry, 'it will be neceſſary for us to go to Paris, and order the king to be brought hence gently; for we can have him better attended when nearer to us than here. We will aſſemble the whole council at Paris, and diſcuſs how the kingdom ſhall be governed, and whether our fair nephew of Orleans be regent or we.' 'It is well ſpoken,' replied the duke of Berry: 'let us conſider of the beſt place for the king to be removed to for the recovery of his health.' After ſome conſultation, it was determined he ſhould be carried, with every precaution, to the caſtle of Creil, which has a good air, and is in a rich country on the river Oiſe.

When this was ſettled, the men at arms were diſbanded, and orders given by the marſhals for them to retire peaceably to their homes, without committing any ravages on the country; and that, if ſuch exceſſes were indulged in, the leaders would be called upon to make reparation.

The king's uncles and the chancellor of France ſent off varlets to the different cities and principal towns

towns in Picardy, to order the inhabitants to be very attentive in the guard of them, for the reaſon that the king was indiſpoſed. Theſe orders were obeyed. The French nation was diſmayed and concerned when it was publicly known that the king laboured under a frenzy. They ſpoke much againſt thoſe who had adviſed him to this expedition to Brittany, and ſaid he had been betrayed by thoſe who had urged him on againſt the duke and ſir Peter de Craon. People's tongues could not be ſtopped, for it was ſo ſerious a misfortune, it was neceſſary vent ſhould be ſomehow given to the vexation it cauſed.

The king was carried to Creil, and put under the care of the before named knights and his phyſicians. The men at arms were diſbanded, and marched home. It was ſtrictly forbidden the queen's houſhold and all others, under pain of being ſeverely puniſhed, to mention this misfortune to the queen, who was far gone with child. It was concealed from her for ſome time, during which the king was under the care of the knights at Creil, and his phyſicians, who were giving him various medicines, which, however, did him little good. At this time, there was a moſt learned phyſician in France, who had not his equal any where, a friend of the lord de Coucy, and born on his lands. His name was maſter William de Harſeley: he had fixed his reſidence in the city of Laon, which he preferred to any other. On firſt hearing of the king's illneſs and the cauſe of it, know-

knowing, as he thought, the king's conſtitution, he ſaid,—' This diſorder of the king proceeds from the alarm in the foreſt, and by inheriting too much of his mother's weak nerves.' Theſe words were carried to the lord de Coucy, at that time in Paris with the duke of Orleans and the king's uncles. The whole of the council, and the principal barons and prelates of the realm, were there aſſembled to conſult on the government of the kingdom during the king's illneſs, and until he ſhould be perfectly reſtored; and whether the duke of Orleans, or his uncles, or all three ſhould have the regency. They were upwards of fifteen days before they could agree: at laſt, it was thonght adviſable, from the youth of the duke of Orleans, which made him unfit to bear ſo great a weight, that the two uncles of the king ſhould govern the kingdom; but that the duke of Burgundy ſhould be the principal; and that the ducheſs of Burgundy ſhould remain with the queen and be reſpected as ſecond to her in rank.

CHAP. VI.

THE LORD DE COUCY INTRODUCES THE GREAT PHYSICIAN, MASTER WILLIAM DE HARSELEY, TO CURE THE KING OF FRANCE.—VARIOUS CAUSES ASSIGNED FOR THIS DISORDER.

THE lord de Coucy was not unmindful of what he had heard of maſter William de Harſeley. He ſpoke of him to the king's uncles, and mentioned his learning and ſucceſs, and that it would be proper he ſhould try his ſkill to recover the king. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy liſtened to it, and ſent for him. On his arrival at Paris, he firſt waited on the lord de Coucy, with whom he was very intimate, and he introduced him to the king's uncles, ſaying, 'Here is maſter William de Harſeley of whom I ſpoke to you.' The two dukes received him kindly, and made him welcome. They then ordered him to viſit the king at Creil, and remain with him until he ſhould have reſtored him to health. Maſter William, in conſequence of theſe orders from the dukes, ſet out from Paris in good array, as was becoming him, and arrived at Creil, where he eſtabliſhed himſelf near the king's perſon, and took the lead over the other phyſicians, undertaking to make a cure; for he ſaw it was to be done, ſince the diſorder was cauſed by weakneſs of nerves, from the ſudden alarm of the appearance of the mid-

madman, and then by the noiſe from the blow on the page's helmet; and he was very anxious to reſtore the king to health.

News of the king of France's illneſs was carried far and near, and, however others may have been grieved at it, you may ſuppoſe that the duke of Brittany and ſir Peter de Craon were not much affected: they ſoon dried their tears, for he was purſuing them with bitter hatred.

Pope Boniface and his cardinals at Rome were rejoiced on hearing it. They aſſembled in full conſiſtory, and ſaid the worſt of their enemies, meaning the king of France, was ſeverely chaſtiſed, when God had thus deprived him of his ſenſes; and that this puniſhment had been inflicted by Heaven, for having ſo ſtrenuouſly ſupported the anti-pope of Avignon; that this chaſtiſement ſhould make him attend more to his own kingdom, and that their cauſe would now be better.

The pope and cardinals at Avignon, conſidering the great ſupport the king had given them, had cauſe for alarm, but they ſhewed none for the honour of the king and realm. They ſaid among themſelves, that the king was young and wilful, and had, by his own rude, brought on him this diſorder; that thoſe about his perſon had allowed him to act too much as he pleaſed; and that he had exerted himſelf in different exerciſes, and by riding poſt night and day, and had laboured unreaſonably, in mind and body, on matters that ſhould have been done by his miniſters and not by himſelf; and that, if he had been properly and

ſoberly educated by the advice of his uncles, this unfortunate illneſs would never have happened.

They added, that, when he was on his journey to Languedoc, he had promiſed, on the word of a king, and ſwore likewiſe on his faith, that he would raiſe a ſufficient force to deſtroy the anti-pope and his cardinals at Rome, and put an end to the ſchiſm and troubles of the church; but he had done nothing, and thus forfeited his oath and promiſe, by which he has angered God, who, to correct him, puniſhes him with this rod of frenzy. It therefore behoves us, when he ſhall have recovered his health, which may ſoon happen, to ſend properly inſtructed legates to remonſtrate with him on this breach of promiſe, in order that, through our neglect, he may not be forgetful of it.

Such was the language at Avignon between the pope and cardinals, who agreed that this diſorder had been incurred by his own negligence and fault; but they greatly blamed thoſe of his council and houſehold for not having better attended to him. Many others, in France, did the ſame.

In a church at Haſpres, in Hainault, dependant on the abbey of Saint Vaſt at Arras, lies the canonized body of Saint Aquaire, in a rich ſhrine of ſilver. This ſaint is celebrated for the cures he has performed on thoſe afflicted with madneſs, and on that account is much viſited from all parts. To pay due reſpect to the ſaint, there was made a figure of wax reſembling the king, which was ſent thither with a large wax taper, and offered, with

much devotion, to the ſhrine of the ſaint, that he might pray to God to alleviate this cruel affliction of the king. A ſimilar offering was made to Saint Hermier in Rouais who has the reputation of curing madneſs, and wherever there were ſaints that were ſuppoſed to have efficacy, by their prayers to God, in ſuch diſorders, thither were ſent offerings from the king, with much ceremony and devotion.

When this event was known in England, the king and lords were greatly concerned thereat. The duke of Lancaſter eſpecially teſtified his ſorrow, and ſaid to the knights near his perſon,—'On my faith, it is a great pity, for he ſhewed himſelf a man of courage, with ſtrong inclinations to do good. When I took leave of him at Amiens, he ſaid,—'Fair couſin of Lancaſter, I earneſtly entreat you will exert yourſelf to the utmoſt of your power that there may be a ſolid peace between the king of England, your nephew, and myſelf, and between our kingdoms: we may then march a powerful army againſt this Amurat, who has conquered the kingdom of Armenia from its lawful monarch, and who intends to deſtroy all Chriſtendom, that we may exalt our faith, as we are bounden ſo to do.' 'Now,' added the duke, 'there is an end to this, for he will never again have that confidence he before enjoyed put in him.' 'That is true enough,' ſaid thoſe who heard him, 'and the kingdom of France ſeems likely to fall into much trouble.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

THE DUKES OF BERRY AND BURGUNDY RUIN THOSE WHO HAD BEEN THE CONFIDENTIAL SERVANTS OF THE KING.—THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY TREATS RUDELY THE CONSTABLE DE CLISSON.

SUCH were the converſations of lords in different countries on hearing of the king of France's illneſs, who remained confined in the caſtle of Creil, under the care of the four knights, and maſter William de Harſeley, who had the ſole management of him: none were allowed to ſpeak with the king, nor even entered the caſtle, but ſuch as had his permiſſion, or were acting under his orders.

At times, the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon came to viſit the king, and ſee how he was going on, but the dukes of Berry and Burgundy never left Paris. They had not as yet made any changes in the government, but they ſhortly intended doing ſo in regard to many who were not in their good graces, from their behaviour when in power, which was, as they thought, contradictory and preſumptuous.

The duke of Berry ſaid, that Cliſſon, la Riviere, le Mercier and le bègue de Villaines, had, during their attendance on the king in Languedoc, cauſed his treaſurer and faithful ſervant Bethiſac to be diſ-

gracefully puniſhed with death, through envy and wickedneſs; and that, in ſpite of any thing he could ſay or do, he could never get him out of their hands. Let them now beware of me, for the time ſhall come when I will repay them with the ſame coin, and ſtruck from the ſame mint.

The duke of Burgundy and thoſe attached to him loved no better the above-named perſons, who had governed the king; for, whenever they wanted any thing at court, they were repulſed ſharply enough, and very little done for them, of which they murmured and talked loudly behind their backs.

The ducheſs of Burgundy, who was a very unforgiving and haughty lady, reſided at Paris with the queen, and had the ſupreme government of her and her houſehold, ſo that no one was permitted to ſpeak with the queen but through her permiſſion. This lady hated with her whole heart ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, on account of the duke of Brittany, who was nearly related to her. She frequently remonſtrated with the duke of Burgundy, ſaying, that thoſe who had ſupported ſir Oliver de Cliſſon againſt ſo potent a prince as his couſin the duke of Brittany were very blame-worthy. The duke of Burgundy was cool and prudent, and ſaw far into the ſtate of affairs and their conſequences: he wiſhed not to encourage any troubles in France, but to keep every one in good humour as long as it ſhould be poſſible, and on this account had never oppoſed any meaſures of his late brother, Charles V. or of his nephew, the preſent king. He therefore

 replied

replied thus gently to his wife: 'Lady, it is good at all times to diſſemble. The duke of Brittany, it is true, is a great prince, and an overmatch for the lord de Cliſſon. If I join the duke, and make myſelf openly one of his parties, the kingdom would be diſſatisfied, and not without reaſon; for the lord de Cliſſon would declare and prove, that the whole hatred our couſin the duke bears him is for having ſupported the intereſts of France, in which we have ſo large a ſhare, and it is ſo believed throughout the realm. Hitherto I have had no cauſe whatever to incline me to the duke againſt the lord de Cliſſon. It therefore behoves me to diſſemble my real ſentiments, if I wiſh to preſerve the favour of the king and country to whom I am bounden by every tie, which is not my caſe with regard to the duke of Brittany. It has happened that my lord the king is indiſpoſed, and in an alarming ſtate, as you know: this is very much againſt the lord de Cliſſon, and will be hurtful to all who adviſed him to undertake this expedition, and on which he was ſo obſtinately bent, in ſpite of every thing my brother and myſelf could urge againſt it. The rod is already prepared with which they ſhall be puniſhed, as you ſhall ſhortly witneſs or hear of; but have the goodneſs, at this moment, to have a little patience. Lady, lady, there is no ſeaſon but what makes ſome return, nor any fortune ſtable, nor afflicted heart but is at times rejoiced, nor angered minds but have their revenge. Cliſſon, la Riviere, Montagu, le Mercier, de Villaines, and

others who have acted improperly will shortly be made to suffer for it.'

With such conversations did the duke and duchess of Burgundy amuse themselves; and not many days after this last, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy had a private conference. They said, 'it was now time to punish those who had dishonoured their nephew, the king, and who had led him to act according to their pleasure. We will begin, first, with the constable, for he is of the highest rank and greatest wealth: when he made his will a short time ago, on being wounded, he proved he had seventeen hundred thousand francs in money and moveables. How the devil could he have amassed such a sum? for the marriage of his daughter, with our cousin, John of Brittany, whom he ransomed from England, must have cost him, in the whole, two hundred thousand francs! But how shall we manage to begin on him, with any reasonable pretext? for he is strongly supported by our nephew, the duke of Orleans, and by many of the great barons of France. However, if we can but once lay hands on him, we will attack him by law, and the parliament at present is of our party.'

'That is true,' replied the duke of Burgundy; 'and the first time he comes to me, which he must do to-morrow on business, I will convince him by the reception I give him, that he is not in my favour, and do you, brother of Berry, do the same when he comes to you.' 'That I will,' answered

ſwered the duke of Berry, and with theſe words the conference ended.

The lord de Cliſſon, who thought not but that he was moderately well in favour with the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, waited on the laſt, for buſineſs of his office. He had been much teized by many knights and ſquires, who were of the late expedition, and wanted money, for they had never received any thing: the chancellor of France and the treaſurer had ſent them to the conſtable to be paid. He came therefore one afternoon to the hotel d'Artois, to remonſtrate with the duke of Burgundy on this buſineſs, and nothing elſe, for he had already been diſmiſſed from any ſhare in the government.

When he arrived at the hotel d'Artois he entered the court with his attendants, who were not numerous, and diſmounted. The conſtable aſcended the ſtairs attended by only one ſquire, the others waiting for him in the court. He found two of the duke's knights in the hall, and demanded from them if the duke was diſengaged, and if he could ſpeak with him. 'Sir, we know not,' replied they; 'but will ſoon inform you, if you will wait here.' They entered the duke's apartment, and found him unoccupied, chatting with a herald, returned from a grand feaſt in Germany. The knights interrupted the converſation, by ſaying, 'My lord, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon is in the hall, and wiſhes to ſpeak with you, if it be your pleaſure.' 'In God's name,' replied the duke, 'let him come forward: we have at preſent lei-

ſure to ſpeak with him, and hear what he has to ſay.' One of the knights left the apartment, and called the conſtable, ſaying, 'Sir, come on: my lord ſends for you.' The conſtable no ſooner entered the room, than the duke changed colour, and repented having ſent for him, although he was anxious to tell him his mind.

The conſtable took off his hood, and, bowing to the duke, ſaid,—'I am come, my lord, to know how to act reſpecting the payment of the knights and ſquires who were of the late expedition, for my office is perpetually beſieged by them; and, as you and my lord of Berry at preſent govern the kingdom, have the goodneſs to inform me.'

The duke of Burgundy angrily replied,—'Cliſſon, Cliſſon, you need not trouble yourſelf about the ſtate of France; for, without your office, it will be perfectly well governed. In an evil hour have you interfered in it. How the devil can you have amaſſed ſuch a ſum as ſeventeen hundred thouſand francs, which you declared yourſelf to be poſſeſſed of by your will? Neither my lord the king, my brother of Berry, nor myſelf, with all our power, have ever been able to collect ſuch a ſum. Quit my preſence, and leave my houſe, and let me never ſee you again; for, if it were not from regard to my own honour, I would have your other eye put out.' At theſe words, the duke of Burgundy went away, leaving the lord de Cliſſon aſtoniſhed. He quitted the apartment, with his head ſunk down, and quite

melan-

melancholy, without being attended by any one. Having croſſed the hall, he deſcended into the court, mounted his horſe, and departed with his people, taking a private way to his own hôtel, without ſaying a word.

CHAP. VIII.

SIR OLIVER DE CLISSON, AFTER THE HARSH ANSWER OF THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY, RETIRES TO MONTLHERY.—BEING PURSUED THITHER, HE HAS TIME TO MAKE HIS RETREAT TO CHASTEAU JOSSELIN.

WHEN the lord de Cliſſon had entered his hôtel, he formed various plans in his own mind as to his future conduct: he foreſaw that very ſhortly public affairs would be badly managed, and had no one to open his mind to on the ſubject, for the duke of Orleans was at Creil: indeed, had he been at Paris, he had no power to ſave or defend him. Suſpecting, after what had paſſed, that the duke of Burgundy would arreſt him, and force his hôtel, he determined not to wait the event, but ordered his moſt confidential ſervants to pack up all he ſhould want, and, in the evening, ſet off from Paris, attended by only two perſons.

He paſſed the gate of Saint Anthony, and rode to Charenton, where, croſſing the Seine by the bridge, he continued his journey to his caſtle of Mont-

Montlhery, ſeven leagues from Paris, where he remained until he heard other news.

The ſame day the duke of Burgundy had rebuffed the conſtable, he met the duke of Berry at the Louvre, on the affairs of the nation. He told his brother of Berry how he had ſpoken to ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, who anſwered, 'You have well done. We muſt, by ſome means or other, lay hold of him; for in truth, Cliſſon, le Mercier, la Riviere and Montagu have plundered the kingdom; but the time is now come when they muſt make ample reſtitution, and their heads ought to pay the forfeit alſo.

I know not the particular reaſons, but it is a fact, that the day the conſtable left Paris, Montagu did the ſame, and alſo by the gate of Saint Anthony. He took the road for Troyes in Champagne, but ſaid he would not ſtop any where until he was arrived at Avignon, whither he had already ſent the greater part of his wealth. He had left a ſufficiency with his wife to maintain her ſtate handſomely; for he foreſaw, ſince the king was deprived of his ſenſes, public affairs would go ill under the government of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who never ſpoke to him.

Sir John le Mercier would have been glad to have done the ſame, had he been able; but he had been put under an arreſt, and nothing could come in or go out of his houſe without the knowledge of his guards. What he had before laid by in a place of ſecurity was of the greateſt ſervice to him at a proper opportunity, for all that was known to

to be his was claimed and ſeized by the two regents. He was afterwards committed a priſoner to the caſtle of the Louvre, as was in like manner le bègue de Villaines, count de Ribadéo in Spain.

They ſent to the hôtel of Montagu, but found no one, nor could they learn whither he was gone, and with this they were forced to be ſatisfied. Inquiries were made if ſir Oliver de Cliſſon were in Paris, and orders were ſent to his hôtel for him to ſurrender himſelf a priſoner in the Louvre: but no perſons was at his hôtel except the houſe-ſteward, who could not give any intelligence concerning him.

Two days paſſed before it was known that he was in his caſtle of Montlhery. The two dukes, impatient to lay hold on him, ordered inſtantly Barrois des Barres, ſir John de Châteaumorant, the lord de Coucy and ſir William de la Trimouille to collect three hundred lances, and ſaid to them,—'March with this force without delay to Montlhery, inveſt the town and caſtle, and do not leave it until you ſhall bring us Cliſſon dead or alive.'

The knights obeyed, as was their duty, for the government of the kingdom was now in the hands of theſe two dukes, and they left Paris with their three hundred lances, not all at once, but in five ſeparate bodies, that their departure might be the leſs noticed. God, however, aſſiſted the conſtable; and he had ſuch good friends among this armament, that he was punctually informed of its departure.

departure, and the hour it would arrive, ſo that he had full leiſure to take proper meaſures not to ſuffer from it. He and his people left Montlhery, and by travelling through bye roads, over heaths, and avoiding all incloſed towns or cities, arrived ſafely in Brittany, and entered his caſtle called château Joſſelin, which was well provided with all things, where he remained to wait other intelligence.

Barrois des Barres and the other knights put their orders into execution, took poſſeſſion of the town of Montlhery, and ſurrounded the caſtle. They remained thus one night, imagining the conſtable was within, but he was not, as you have heard. On the morrow, while they were preparing for the aſſault, the ſervants in the caſtle came out to know what they were about. The knights ſaid they wanted ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, and that was the object of their coming. The ſervants in guard of the caſtle replied, that the lord de Cliſſon had left it four days ago, and offered to open every part of it for them to ſearch. The knights and ſquires entered the caſtle armed from head to foot, as if for inſtant combat, for fear of being ſurpriſed by treachery or an ambuſcade. They, however, found that the ſervants had told them the truth; for they minutely ſearched every part of it, without diſcovering any traces of the lord de Cliſſon. After this, they marched away on their return to Paris, when they related to thoſe who had ſent them all they had done.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

THE LORD DE LA RIVIERE, THE PRINCIPAL MINISTER OF THE KING OF FRANCE BEFORE HIS ILLNESS, IS MADE PRISONER BY ORDERS OF THE DUKES OF BERRY AND BURGUNDY.—THE DUCHESS OF BERRY INTERCEDES FOR HIM WITH HER LORD.

THE dukes of Berry and Burgundy, finding that the conſtable had eſcaped, were much vexed; while, on the contrary, the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon rejoiced at it. 'Now,' ſaid the duke of Burgundy, 'he ſhews by his flight that he ſuſpects us; but, though he has fled, he is not yet acquitted. We will force him haſtily to return, or he ſhall loſe every thing we can lay our hands on. Even this ſhall not free him from ſome heavy charges which only wait for trial, to prove him guilty and deſerving puniſhment. If the great, the powerful and the wicked be not chaſtiſed, juſtice will not be equally dealt, and the lower ranks and the poor will with truth be diſcontented. Juſtice ought to be dealt out without diſcrimination to all, that every one may take example.'

Such was the diſcourſe of the duke of Burgundy; but the lord de Cliſſon was ſafe in his caſtle of Joſſelin, in Brittany, well provided with every thing to defend it, and to hold out a long ſiege.

The

The day that Barrois des Barres returned to Paris, to tell his lords that ſir Oliver de Cliſſon was not at Montlhery, the two dukes ſaid,—'Barrois, ſet out to-morrow very early, and ride to Auneau. We have heard the lord de la Riviere is there. Demand to ſee him from us and from the council, and manage ſo that you give a good account of him when we ſhall require it from you.' Sir Barrois, having promiſed obedience, rode the next morning with his men at arms to Auneau, near to Chartres. It has a handſome caſtle, which the lord de la Riviere received in marriage with his wife the lady of Auneau, and he had greatly improved both the caſtle and lands. He was much beloved by his vaſſals, whom he treated with affectionate care. The commiſſioners ſent by the dukes, on their arrival at Auneau, executed their orders on the lord de la Riviere, whom they found with his lady and children. He was expecting ſuch a meſſage, for he had already learnt that ſir John le Mercier and the count de Ribadéo were in priſon, and that the conſtable had fled from Montlhery to a more diſtant and ſecure caſtle.

Thoſe who had brought him this intelligence ſaid,—'Sir, ſave yourſelf; for the envious, who at this preſent govern, are againſt you, and fortune has turned with them.' To this he had replied,—'Here and every where elſe I am in the power of God: if I fly or hide, I ſhould accuſe myſelf as guilty of crimes of which I feel myſelf incapable and innocent. God has given me all I poſſeſſed, and he may take it from me whenever he pleaſes:

to

to his will I ſubmit. I have faithfully and loyally ſerved the late king, of happy memory, as well as the preſent king. My ſervices have been well known to both, and they have royally rewarded them. I feel bold enough, from what by their commands I have done for the good of the kingdom, to ſtand the judgment of the parliament of Paris; and, if they ſhall find in my whole conduct any thing worthy of blame, let me be puniſhed.'

Such was the declaration of the lord de la Riviere to his wife and his friends, before the commiſſioners from the regents came to Auneau. On their arrival, his ſervants ſaid,—'My lord, here are ſuch and ſuch perſons, with a large force, who want to enter the caſtle: what do you ſay? ſhall we open the gates?' 'Why not?' he replied: 'they are very welcome.' On ſaying this, he went to meet them, and received every one moſt graciouſly, and in converſing together they all entered the hall of the caſtle of Auneau. After a ſhort pauſe, ſir Barrois des Barres, a gallant and courteous knight, with much vexation, arreſted the lord de la Riviere, according to the orders he had received, which he was bound to execute. The lord de la Riviere held him excuſed and immediately obeyed his ſummons; for he neither could nor would otherwiſe act by diſputing it; and he remained a priſoner in his own caſtle of Auneau.

You may imagine his lady was in great anguiſh when ſhe ſaw fortune thus adverſe to her lord, and ſhe ſtill more dreaded the concluſion.

The lord de la Riviere was not long a priſoner

in

in his own caſtle, before he was ſent for by thoſe who ruled the temporality and ſpirituality of France (for the perſon who ſigned himſelf pope Clement, held all his power in that country through the good will of theſe dukes) to Paris, where he was confined in the priſons of the Louvre. Many in France were afflicted at this, but they dared only ſpeak of it in private. They were indifferent as to ſir John le Mercier, but the lord de la Riviere had been courteous, debonair, and patient in hearing poor people, and ſuch as were not of rank, to attend his public audiences. It was reported in Paris that they were to be beheaded; and it was whiſpered ſlanderouſly, to ruin their popularity, that they had been traitors to the crown, and plundered the treaſury of great wealth, with which they had kept up their ſtate, and built houſes and fine caſtles, while poor knights and ſquires, who had expoſed their lives in arms for the ſervice of the realm, and ſold their inheritances for ſubſiſtence, could not obtain any payments, for a long time paſt, from ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, the lord de la Riviere, ſir John le Mercier, or from Montagu, who had fled.

Their numerous enemies, who were in great ſtrength, declared they deſerved to die, which put them in great riſk. They urged, as a crime againſt them, that they had adviſed the king to go to Mans, and thence to Brittany, and had, by poiſoned liquors which they gave him to drink, brought on this frenzy; and it was currently reported, that the king's phyſicians, who had the

care

care of his health, were not, in any way, permitted to have their will, nor was their advice followed.

So much was ſaid againſt theſe two, that the lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier were removed from the Louvre and delivered over to the provoſt of the Châtelet, and confined in the caſtle of St. Anthony, under the guard of the viſcount d'Achy, at that time the governor. On this removal, though the common report ran that they were to be put to death, in truth they were never condemned; nor could thoſe by whom they had been examined, ever in their conſciences find them guilty of death. They were, however, daily attacked by ſome, who ſaid, 'Take heed to your ſouls, for your bodies are already diſpoſed of: you are both condemned to have your heads cut off.' In this diſtreſſing ſtate they were kept for ſome time; but the bègue de Villaines, a great knight and valiant man at arms, from the country of Beauce, inculpated in the ſame accuſations, had many friends, who pleaded effectually in his favour, and he was freed from priſon with a full acquittal. On his leaving the priſon, he was told by his relations, ſir Barrois des Barres and others, to prepare to ſet out for Caſtille, where in future he muſt reſide, on the handſome inheritance he gained by his marriage with the counteſs de Ribadéo.

He followed the advice that had been given him, and ſpeedily packed up all he wanted, and ſet out for Caſtille, leaving his two friends in priſon, and in daily peril of loſing their lives. All the property, moveable and immoveable, of ſir John le

Mercier, that was in France, and could be laid hold of, was confiſcated and given to others. His fine houſe at Pont à Louvion*, in the dioceſe of Laon, that had coſt him ſuch immenſe ſums, was ſeized and given to the lord de Coucy with all its eſtates, manors and dependancies. I am ignorant if this was done at his requeſt, but he poſſeſſed it, and his heirs afterwards.

The regents treated the lord de la Riviere very cruelly. They confiſcated all his eſtates, as well what had deſcended to him as thoſe he had purchaſed, and all his moveables wherever they could be found. The lady, his wife, had, however, reſerved to her uſe all the domain of Auneau, and whatever elſe ſhe had inherited from her family, by father or mother. She had a young and genteel daughter, of ten years old, who had been betrothed to James de Chaſtillon, ſon and heir to ſir Hugh de Chaſtillon, who had formerly been maſter of the croſs bows of France: he was already in poſſeſſion of large eſtates, and in the expectation of more. He had made ſeveral excurſions with his intended father-in-law, the lord de la Riviere; but, notwithſtanding this, the regents would break off the intended marriage in ſpite of the young man. This connection was put an end to, and he married elſewhere, according to the pleaſure of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, and

* Pont a Louvion,—it is in the MSS. Pont-Aubumen, and Pont à Lonnion. Q. if not Pont à Nouvion. There are three villages of that name in the election of Laon.

the

the lord de la Trimouille, who took the management of the buſineſs.

The lord de la Riviere had likewiſe a ſon, a ſquire, who was his heir, married to the only daughter of the lord de Dampmartin, who was not likely to have more children, and this daughter was his heireſs. The regents wanted likewiſe to break off this marriage, and unite her more nobly; but the count de Dampmartin, like an honourable man, ſtepped forward, and ſaid,—'That as long as the ſon of the lord de la Riviere lived, his daughter ſhould have no other huſband; and, if violence were uſed to ſhorten his days, his daughter ſhould remain a widow, and he would ſo ſtrongly ſettle his property, that thoſe who might wiſh to gain it by fraud or otherwiſe would find themſelves diſappointed.'

When they ſaw the firmneſs of the count de Dampmartin, and that he would not give up his ſon-in-law, they left him quiet, and the marriage remained good; but the firſt I mentioned was ſet aſide by an abſolution from pope Clement, who was forced to give it whether he would or not; for he had no power over the realm of France, but what the two dukes were pleaſed to allow him, ſo greatly was the church lowered and hurt by the diſgraceful ſchiſm, and by the conduct of thoſe who ought to have ruled it better.

Many in France, and in other countries, acquitted the lord de la Riviere from all blame, but their excuſing him was of no avail; for although his innocence was as clear as the day, no one dared

to ſpeak in his behalf, but that courageous young lady the ducheſs of Berry.

Too often had that good lady caſt herſelf at her lord's feet, ſaying, with uplifted hands,—'Ah, my lord, you allow yourſelf to be ſwayed wrongly and ſinfully, by the envious and diſappointed, who poiſon your mind with tales againſt this valiant knight, and virtuous man, the lord de la Riviere. They accuſe him unjuſtly, and no one dares to ſay a word in his defence. I wiſh you therefore to know, that, if he be put to death, I ſhall never again taſte happineſs, but remain all my days in ſorrow and affliction. He is, whoever may ſay the contrary, a moſt loyal and prudent knight. Ah, my lord, you little remember the handſome ſervices he has done you, nor the pains and difficulty he had to encounter when he accompliſhed our marriage. I do not ſay this as pretending to have been worth the trouble, for I am but a poor lady in compariſon to you; but you, who were ſo anxious to have me, had to deal with a hard and cunning lord, the late count de Foix, in whoſe wardſhip I then was; and, if it had not been for the perſuaſive manners of the lord de la Riviere, I ſhould have never been your ducheſs, but ſettled in England; for the duke of Lancaſter ſolicited me for the earl of Derby, and the count de Foix inclined more to him than to you. Moſt dear ſir, you ought not to be forgetful of theſe things, for you know what I ſay is true. I therefore moſt humbly entreat that you would have compaſſion on the gallant knight who ſo courteouſly conducted

your buſineſs, in regard to me, that he ſuffer neither in life nor limb.'

The duke of Berry, thus attacked by his young and handſome wife, whom he doated upon, and feeling that all ſhe had ſaid was true, was much ſoftened in his hatred to the lord de la Riviere; and to appeaſe his lady, who he ſaw was in earneſt, replied,—'Lady, as God may ſave my ſoul, I would rather have paid twenty thouſand francs, than that la Riviere ſhould have miſconducted himſelf towards the crown of France. Before this indiſpoſition of the king, I loved him well, and conſidered him as a prudent and valiant knight. Since, however, you thus anxiouſly intereſt yourſelf for him, I will abate my anger; and from your entreaties and ſolicitations he ſhall fare the better. I will exert my power to the utmoſt, and do more for your prayers than if all France united had petitioned me in his behalf.'

'My lord,' anſwered the lady, 'pleaſe God, I ſhall ſee the effects of it. You will do a good and charitable act; for I believe there is not one, beſide myſelf, that has ſpoken in his favour.' 'You ſay truly,' replied the duke; 'but when you ſo warmly take up the matter, it is fully ſufficient.'

Thus was the ducheſs contented with the anſwers of the duke; and when he and the duke of Burgundy, with their councils, met on the buſineſs, there was much altercation. There is not a doubt but, if this virtuous lady had not interfered, he would have been put to death. From affection to her, it was otherwiſe; and ſir John le Mercier

was fortunate in being the companion of the lord de la Riviere, and implicated in the ſame charges, for they could not in conſcience have executed one without the other.

Notwithſtanding this delay, they did not feel perfectly ſecure in priſon, for they knew they had many enemies, who were now in power, and angry (though they were forced to abide by it) that they had not ſooner been puniſhed. Sir John le Mercier, during his confinement in the Baſtille, was in ſuch continual grief and tears that he nearly loſt his ſight. It was melancholy indeed to hear the bitterneſs of his lamentations.

CHAP. X.

AFTER MANY ADJOURNMENTS AND DELAYS, THE CONSTABLE DE CLISSON IS, BY JUDGMENT OF THE COURT OF PARLIAMENT OF PARIS, BANISHED THE REALM OF FRANCE, CONDEMNED TO PAY A FINE OF ONE HUNDRED THOUSAND FRANCS, AND DECLARED INCAPABLE OF HOLDING THE OFFICE OF CONSTABLE OF FRANCE.

DURING the confinement of the two knights in priſon, where they remained upwards of a year, uncertain what the concluſion would be, the lord de Cliſſon was attacked every way, to degrade his

his honour and deprive him of his office. They were more deſirous to lay hold of him than any others of the late miniſtry, but he took good care to prevent it. He was wiſe in ſo doing; for if he had been arreſted, every thing was prepared for his execution the moment he ſhould be condemned, without the ſmalleſt hope of mercy, to pleaſe his adverſary, the duke of Brittany, who had never done any good to France.

When the regents found he had eſcaped, they reſolved to proceed in a different manner. It was ordered, that he ſhould be ſummoned by the court of parliament of Paris to appear before it, and anſwer ſuch charges as ſhould be made againſt him, under pain of being diſhonoured and baniſhed from France.

Commiſſioners were ſent after him into Brittany, by the chamber of parliament, to ſummon and arreſt him. They acquitted themſelves well, ſo far as going into Brittany and demanding at all the towns and caſtles belonging to ſir Oliver de Cliſſon where he was to be found, ſaying,—'We are ſent by the king and council to ſpeak with my lord the conſtable: tell us how we can ſee him, that we may perform our meſſage.'

The inhabitants of the towns or caſtles dependant on the lord de Cliſſon anſwered, as they had been tutored to do,—'Gentlemen, you are very welcome: if we wanted to ſpeak with our lord the conſtable, we would go to ſuch a place, where we ſhould find him without fail.' Thus were the com-

miſſioners ſent from town to town, aſking after ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, but without ever finding him, or having any other anſwers. At length being tired of the purſuit, they returned to Paris, and related their ill ſucceſs, and the tricks the conſtable's vaſſals had played them. Thoſe who had accuſed him, and wiſhed his condemnation, would not that he had acted otherwiſe, for now they ſaid, they would have inſtant judgment, and he ſhould be treated according to his deſerts.

They publicly ſummoned, by order of parliament, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon in all legal form, allowing the uſual interval between each ſummons, to prevent thoſe attached to him from ſaying that hatred or malice had outſtripped juſtice. After every adjournment was completed, without any intelligence received from him, and after he had been ſummoned firſt at the door of the chamber of parliament, then publicly at the gates and on the ſteps of the palace, with every uſual ſolemnity, without any anſwer being returned, a moſt cruel ſentence was paſſed by the court.

He was baniſhed the kingdom of France for a falſe and wicked traitor to the crown, condemned to pay a fine of one hundred thouſand marcs of ſilver, for the extortions which he had fraudulently and wickedly committed in former times, as well in the office of conſtable as in the exchequer and elſewhere, and to be deprived for ever of the office of conſtable of France.

The duke of Orleans was invited by the court to be

be preſent when this ſentence was paſſed, but he would not, and excuſed himſelf. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy were there, with a great many of the barons of France.

Now obſerve the works of Fortune, how firm and ſteady they are, when ſuch a valiant and good knight who had laboured ſo ſucceſsfully for the honour of France was thus maliciouſly degraded in honour and hurt in his fortune. He was lucky in not obeying any of the ſummons, for, had he come, they would have diſgracefully put him to death; nor could the duke of Orleans have ſaved him, for, if he had interceded for him, no attention would have been paid to it. You may ſuppoſe that the duke of Brittany and ſir Peter de Craon, who were ſtrongly connected with each other, were much rejoiced at this; but they were vexed the conſtable had not borne company with the lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier.

This ſentence made a great noiſe in France and elſewhere. Some pitied him, and ſaid in ſecret that he had been unjuſtly treated: others oppoſed it, ſaying it was fortunate he had not been lain hold of and hanged, for he was deſerving of it. 'Our regents,' they added, 'who are well acquainted with his manner of life, have not been to blame in ſuffering him to be thus treated. How the devil could he have laid by ſuch a ſum as a million and a half of florins? It could not have been by conqueſts in war, but from pillage and robbery, and

and from the pay of poor knights and ſquires, as is well known at the chancery and treaſury, where it is all written down. In the expeditions to Flanders, he raiſed and received large ſums of money, as well as in that which the king made into Germany. All the taxes for the war, and the payment of the men at arms, paſſed through his hands. He paid himſelf and others as he pleaſed, keeping the better part, without any one daring to ſay a word againſt it.'

In ſuch terms was ſir Oliver de Cliſſon accuſed behind his back; and the proverb ſays truly, that 'thoſe whom neceſſity forces to ſell have never a fair offer.'

The duke of Brittany cauſed it to be rumoured throughout his country, that whenever the dukes of Berry and Burgundy ſhould pleaſe, he could eaſily reduce the lord de Cliſſon to the loweſt ſtate; but at the moment he left him undiſturbed, to ſee what turn affairs would take, for he expected, from the meaſures then purſuing, the lord de Cliſſon muſt be deprived of the conſtableſhip.

The duke of Brittany and ſir Peter de Craon were thus ſuddenly relieved from all anxiety by the favour of dame Fortune, who, ever in motion, exalts thoſe who leaſt expect it, and tumbles others into the dirt from the top of her wheel.

Sir Oliver de Cliſſon, the lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier were principally accuſed of being the authors of the king's illneſs; and it

was

was commonly reported by thoſe who hated them, and wiſhed their death, that they had poiſoned the king. Now conſider how little there was in this charge, or how little probability of their attempting ſuch an act, who were ſure of being perſecuted if any accident happened to the king, and of courſe would have been the moſt eager to have preſerved him in health. But nothing was believed which they urged in their defence, as you already know. The lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier were for a long time impriſoned in the Baſtille, and in great danger of being publicly beheaded. It would undoubtedly have been done, if the king had not very opportunely recovered his health, and had it not been for the ſtrong and repeated interceſſions the ducheſs of Berry made for the lord de la Riviere.

The lord de Cliſſon reſided in Brittany; and a ſevere warfare was kept up between him and the duke, which coſt many lives, as will be related hereafter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

KING CHARLES RECOVERS HIS SENSES THROUGH THE MERCY OF GOD, AND THE DILIGENT ATTENTION OF HIS PHYSICIAN, MASTER WILLIAM DE HARSELEY.

THE diſorder, which befel the king on his journey to Brittany, greatly affected all his ſubjects, and they naturally felt for their king, who, before this illneſs, was very popular with all ranks. Being the chief, every part of the government ſuffered; for, in like manner, when the head of a man is ſick, his other members are not painleſs. No one ventured to talk openly of his indiſpoſition, which was concealed as much as it could be. Indeed, it was perfectly unknown to the queen until ſhe was recovered from her lying in; and I believe this time ſhe was brought to bed of a daughter.

Maſter William de Harſeley, who had the king under his care, reſided quietly with him at Creil, and was very attentive to him, which gained him honour and profit, for by little and little he recovered for him his health. He firſt got rid of the fever and great heat he complained of, and then reſtored to him his appetite, ſleep, and his recollection of things about him. Until he was ſtrong enough to bear removal for change of air, he

he allowed him to ride, hunt, and amuſe himſelf with hawking.

On the news of the king's recovery being ſpread abroad, the whole kingdom of France was rejoiced, and moſt heartily and ſincerely were thankſgivings offered up to God for having reſtored the king to his ſenſes and memory. During his reſidence at Creil, he demanded to ſee the queen and his ſon: ſhe came thither, and brought the dauphin. The king received them very kindly; and thus by degrees, through the mercy of God, was he reſtored to health.

Maſter William de Harſeley, ſeeing him in ſo fair a way, was in high ſpirits, and not without reaſon, for he had performed an aſtoniſhing cure. He now gave him up to the care of his brother, the duke of Orleans, and his uncles, the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon, ſaying to them,—'Thanks to God, the king is now well: I deliver him up to you; but henceforward, you muſt carefully avoid angering or vexing him, for as yet his nerves have not quite recovered their ſtrength, though they will daily get better. Amuſements and relaxations from the fatigues of buſineſs will be of ſervice to him, and, above all, he muſt not weary himſelf too much with his miniſters or council; for his head will continue ſome time weak and delicate, as he has been much pulled down and ſhattered by this indiſpoſition.'

Having conſulted together, they reſolved to retain maſter William de Harſeley at ſuch an ample ſalary as ſhould ſatisfy him; for it is the object of

all

all medical men to gain large ſalaries, and as much profit as poſſible, from the lords and ladies who call for their aid. It was therefore propoſed to him to remain with the king; but he excuſed himſelf, ſaying, 'that he was old and weakly; that the manner of living at court would not agree with his years, and that he muſt immediately return to his nurſling at home.' When they ſaw he was determined in his refuſal, they preſſed him no further.

They gave him permiſſion to depart, and, on his taking leave, preſented him with one thouſand crowns of gold, and an order for four horſes on the poſt-maſters whenever he ſhould pleaſe to come to court. I believe he never returned; for he continued in the city of Laon, where he died very rich, poſſeſſed of thirty thouſand francs. He was the moſt niggardly man of his time: his whole pleaſure was amaſſing money, and never ſpending a farthing at home, but eating and drinking abroad wherever he could. With ſuch rods are phyſicians corrected.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

THE TRUCE IS PROLONGED BETWEEN FRANCE AND ENGLAND.—THE VISCOUNT DE CHASTELBON DOES HOMAGE FOR THE COUNTY OF FOIX TO THE KING OF FRANCE.

TO continue this noble and pleaſant hiſtory, undertaken at the requeſt and pleaſure of that liberal and potent prince, my very dear lord and patron, Guy de Chaſtillon, count de Blois, lord of Aveſnes, Chimay, Beaumont, Schoenhoven and Turgow. I John Froſſart, prieſt and chaplain to my very dear lord before named, and at the time treaſurer and canon of Chimay and Lille in Flanders, ſet myſelf to work at my forge, to produce new and noble matter relative to the wars between France and England and their allies, as clearly appears from the various treaties which are of this date, and which excellent materials, through the grace of God, I ſhall work upon as long as I live; for the more I labour at it, the more it delights me, juſt as a gallant knight or ſquire at arms, who loves his profeſſion, the longer he continues it, ſo much the more delectable it appears.

You have had it before related in theſe chronicles, that a truce had been agreed on for three years at Leulinghen, between France and England; that ambaſſadors from France, namely the count de Saint Pol and the lord de Châteaumorant, had brought

brought the papers ſigned and ſealed from England; and that, ſince then, the lord de Châteaumorant and ſir Taupin de Cantemelle had accompanied the dukes of Lancaſter and York from the conferences at Amiens to London, to learn the intentions of the king and parliament of England, in regard to the advances which had been made at Amiens towards a ſolid peace between the two nations, ſubject, however, to the conſent of England, which had been reſerved in the treaty by the dukes of Lancaſter and York.

The French knights had returned to France; for they were told nothing could be done in the matter until the meeting of the parliament, which was appointed to be holden at Weſtminſter at Michaelmas: that then the affair would be diſcuſſed, and they ſhould have an anſwer. When it was known in England how grievouſly the king of France was afflicted, the buſineſs was much retarded. Nevertheleſs, the king and the duke of Lancaſter were deſirous of peace between England and France, and, had it depended on them, it would have been concluded; but it was not ſo, for the commons of England preferred war to peace, ſaying, 'that war with France was more beneficial to them than otherwiſe.' This was alſo the opinion of Thomas duke of Gloceſter, conſtable of England, who was very popular throughout the country. He inclined for war, as did all the young men who were anxious to ſignalize themſelves in arms; but his brother, the duke of Lancaſter, as the oldeſt and moſt powerful,

powerful, took the lead, and ſaid, 'the war had laſted long enough between France and England, and that a good peace, if properly attended to, would be very welcome to all parties, who had ſuffered greatly from the long ſtate of warfare.' The duke added, 'that holy Chriſtendom was in danger from Bajazet, who was in great force on the frontiers of Hungary, ſorely oppreſſing that country; and that was the proper theatre for all young bachelors who wiſhed to try their ſkill in arms.'

Let us weigh well theſe words of the duke of Lancaſter, which were offered with the beſt intentions; for he had many times invaded France, and overrun that country with ſmall gain. He had undergone great bodily fatigue; and, though he burnt and deſtroyed the flat country, it was almoſt as ſoon recovered again from the damages it had ſuffered. He ſaid that this war led to no good end, but, if continued, muſt be puſhed forward with vigour, and the ſlighteſt reverſe might be attended with the worſt conſequences. He likewiſe perceived the king was more deſirous of peace than war.

I, the author of this hiſtory, know not how to determine who was in the right, or who in the wrong; but it was ſaid the reaſon of the duke of Lancaſter's conduct was that he had married his two daughters in Caſtille and Portugal, and therefore he was deſirous of peace. His ſon in law, the king of Caſtille, was young, and, to prevent any troubles from his grandees, and in order that

he might reign quietly, it was neceſſary there ſhould be ſuch a peace with France as the Engliſh could not infringe. Should they do ſo, the French would inſtantly fall on Caſtille; for they had free entrances thither, through the kingdom of Arragon, of which the lady Jolande de Bar, a French woman, was queen, and who governed that kingdom as well as Catalonia, or through the countries of Béarn and the Baſques; for the viſcount de Châteaubon, the heir to the late count de Foix, had ſworn and ſealed to grant this permiſſion, when required by the king of France.

The French had, therefore, ſeveral entrances to Caſtille, without danger of oppoſition from the king of Navarre, who would not willingly anger his couſin-german the king of France. His brother, ſir Peter de Navarre, was beſide at the court of France, and would inſtantly ſoften any diſputes that ſhould ariſe between the king of France and his brother of Navarre; for he was a good Frenchman, and never acted but for the mutual intereſt of the two kings.

The duke of Lancaſter was fully aware of all the conſequences of war, and frequently remonſtrated on the ſubject with his ſon, Henry earl of Derby, who, though young, had an underſtanding and prudence that ſeemed likely to produce perfection. This earl of Derby had four fine ſons, Henry, John, Humphrey and Thomas, and two daughters, by Mary de Bohun, daughter to the earl of Hereford and Northampton, conſtable of England,

England, and poſſeſſed in her right very large eſtates.

The concluſion of the matter reſpecting peace, which was long diſcuſſed in the parliament held at Weſtminſter of prelates, noblemen and citizens from the cities and principal towns, was, that a truce ſhould take place between England, France, and their reſpective allies, by ſea and land, to laſt from Michaelmas to Saint John Baptiſt's day, and one year longer. Thoſe who had been ſent by the king of France carried back the articles of the truce properly ſigned and ſealed, and the agreement was well obſerved by all parties.

The health of the king of France had been ſo exceedingly weakened by his late illneſs that his council knew not to whom to apply for advice; for the phyſician who had before attended, maſter William de Harſeley, was dead. He had, however, given the king, before he left him, ſeveral good recipes which he had uſed, and had returned to Paris in the winter with very good health, to the great joy of his family and the whole commonalty of France, with whom he was very popular.

The queen accompanied him from Creil to Paris, where they reſided at the hôtel de Saint Pol. At times he went to the Louvre, but for the moſt part ſtaid at the hôtel de Saint Pol; and, during the long winter nights, there were carollings, dancings and other amuſements, in the preſence of the king, queen, ducheſs of Berry,

ducheſs of Orleans and other ladies, who thus paſſed the winter nights.

At this ſeaſon, the viſcount de Châteaubon came to Paris, to do homage to the king for the county of Foix, which he inherited as legal heir to Gaſton de Foix, and which was a fief dependant on France. Béarn is an independant ſtate, and the lords of it owe ſervice to none other lord but God, notwithſtanding the claims the late prince of Wales, of happy memory, urged againſt Gaſton de Foix, the late lord of Béarn. The prince pretended it was dependant on Aquitaine, but the count de Foix denied the fact. To ſay the truth, all theſe claims of the prince were inſtigated through the count John d'Armagnac, as has been already told, ſo that I ſhall now paſs the matter over.

When the viſcount de Châteaubon, whom henceforward I ſhall call count de Foix, came to Paris, he brought a couſin with him, a baſtard-ſon of the late count, called Evan de Foix, a handſome and accompliſhed knight, whom his late father would have willingly made his heir, with his brother Gracien, that was now with the king of Navarre, but the barons of Béarn would not conſent to it. The matter, therefore, remained unſettled, for the count, as you have ſeen, died ſuddenly. On ſir Evan being introduced to the king, he took a great liking to him, for he was wonderfully handſome and well made; he was beſides of the ſame age with the king; and the affairs of the viſcount de Châteaubon were benefited by this friendſhip, as they were the more

ſpeedily

ſpeedily concluded. The viſcount returned home; but ſir Evan remained at court, and was named by the king one of the knights of his bed-chamber, with twelve courſers at the charge of the crown.

CHAP. XIII.

THE KING OF FRANCE IN GREAT DANGER OF HIS LIFE AT A MASQUED DANCE OF MEN DRESSED LIKE SAVAGES.—POPE BONIFACE AND THE CARDINALS AT ROME SEND A LEARNED FRIAR TO THE KING.

NOT long after this, a marriage took place between a young ſquire of Vermandois and a damſel of the queen, both of the royal houſehold. The court were much pleaſed at it, and the king reſolved to keep their wedding feaſt at his expenſe. It was held at the hôtel of Saint Pol, and great crowds of lords attended; among whom were the dukes of Orleans, Berry, Burgundy, and their ducheſſes. The wedding-day was paſſed in dancing and joy. The king entertained at ſupper the queen in great ſtate; and every one exerted himſelf to add to the gaiety, ſeeing how much delighted the king appeared.

There was, in the king's houſehold, a Norman ſquire, called Hugonin de Genſay, a near relation of the bridegroom, who thought of the following

piece of pleaſantry to amuſe the king and ladies. This marriage was on a Tueſday before Candlemas-day, and he had in the evening provided ſix coats of linen covered with fine flax, the colour of hair. He dreſſed the king in one of them, the count de Jouy, a young and gallant knight, in another, which became him well; ſir Charles de Poitiers, ſon of the count de Valentinois, had the third; ſir Evan de Foix the fourth; the ſon of the lord de Nantouillet had the fifth, and a young knight the ſixth*.

When they were all thus dreſſed, by having the coats ſewed round them, they appeared like ſavages, for they were covered with hair from head to foot. This maſquerade pleaſed the king greatly, and he expreſſed his pleaſure to his ſquire. It was ſo ſecretly contrived that no one knew any thing of the matter but the ſervants who had attended on them. Sir Evan de Foix, who ſeemed to have more foreſight of what was to happen, ſaid to the king, — 'Sire, command ſtrictly that no one come near us with torches; for, if a ſpark fall on the coats we are dreſſed in, the flax will inſtantly take fire, and we muſt inevitably be burnt: take care, therefore, of what I ſay.' 'Evan,' replied the king, 'you ſpeak well and wiſely, and your advice ſhall be attended to.' He then forbade his ſervants to follow, and, ſending for one of the ſer-

* In the Hiſtory of France by Villaret, theſe maſkers were, —the king,—Hugues de Guiſſai,—le comte de Joigni,—Aymard de Poitiers, ſon of the count de Valentinois,—le bâtard de Foix,—Jean de Nanſouillet.

jeants

jeants at arms that waited at the doors of the apartments, ſaid to him,—'Go to the room where the ladies are, and command, in the king's name, that all the torches be placed on one ſide of it; and that no perſon come near ſix ſavage men who are about to enter.'

The ſerjeant did as he had been ordered by the king, and the torch bearers withdrew on one ſide and no one approached the dancers, ſo long as the ſavages ſtaid in the room. The apartment was now clear of all but ladies, damſels, and knights and ſquires, who were dancing with them. Soon after, the duke of Orleans entered, attended by four knights, and ſix torches, ignorant of the orders that had been given, and of the entrance of the ſavages. He firſt looked at the dancing, and then took part himſelf, juſt as the king of France made his appearance, with five others dreſſed like ſavages, and covered with flax, to repreſent hair from head to foot. Not one perſon in the company knew them; and they were all faſtened together, while the king led them dancing. On their entrance, every one was ſo occupied in examining them, that the orders about the torches were forgotten. The king, who was the leader, fortunately for him, quitted them, to ſhew himſelf to the ladies, as was natural to his youth, and, paſſing by the queen, placed himſelf near the ducheſs of Berry, who though his aunt, was the youngeſt of the company. The ducheſs amuſed herſelf in talking with him, and endeavouring to find out who he was; but the king riſing up

from his ſeat, would not diſcover himſelf. The ducheſs ſaid, 'You ſhall not eſcape thus, for I will know your name.'

At this moment, a moſt unfortunate accident befel the others, through the youthful gaiety of the duke of Orleans, who, if he had foreſeen the miſchief he was about to cauſe, it is to be preſumed would not, for any conſideration, have ſo acted. He was very inquiſitive in examining them, to find out who they were; and, as the five were dancing, he took one of the torches from his ſervants, and, holding it too near their dreſſes, ſet them on fire. Flax, you know, is inſtantly in a blaze, and the pitch, with which the cloth had been covered to faſten the flax, added to the impoſſibility of extinguiſhing it. They were likewiſe chained together, and their cries were dreadful; for, the fire was ſo ſtrong, ſcarcely any dared approach. Some knights indeed did their utmoſt to diſengage them, but the pitch burnt their hands very ſeverely; and they ſuffered a long time afterwards from it.

One of the five, Nantouillet, recollected that the buttery was near, broke the chain, and, flying thither, flung himſelf into a large tub of water which was there, for waſhing diſhes and plates. This ſaved him, or he would have been burnt to death like the others: but he was withal ſome time very ill. When the queen heard the cauſe of the cries, ſhe was alarmed leſt the king ſhould be hurt, for he had told her he would be one of the ſix, and in her fright fainted and fell down: her

ladies

ladies and knights haſtened to her aſſiſtance; and the confuſion was ſo great, no one knew what to do. The ducheſs of Berry ſaved the king by throwing the train of her robe over him, and detaining him, for he wanted to quit her. 'Where are you going,' ſaid ſhe: 'do not you ſee your companions are in a blaze? Who are you? for it is not now a time to keep it ſecret.' He then named himſelf, ſaying, 'I am the king.' 'Ah, my lord,' replied the ducheſs, 'put on quickly another dreſs, and ſhew yourſelf to the queen, for ſhe is very much diſtreſſed about you.'

The king on this left the room, and, having thrown aſide his mummery, dreſſed himſelf as faſt as he could, and returned to the queen, who had been much comforted by the ducheſs of Berry. When the king had quitted her, ſhe went to the queen and ſaid, 'Madam do not be alarmed for the king: you will ſhortly ſee him, for I have been talking with him.' As ſhe ſaid this, the king appeared, and the queen trembled for joy: ſhe was carried by her knights to her chamber, where the king attended and comforted her.

The baſtard of Foix, when on fire, cried aloud, 'Save the king, ſave the king!' who indeed was ſaved in the manner I have related. It was the providence of God that inſpired him to leave his companions and converſe with the ladies, for, had he remained with them, he muſt inevitably have been burnt to death.

This terrible accident happened about twelve o'clock at night, in the ball-room, at the hôtel de

Saint

Saint Pol, and it was a moſt melancholy ſpectacle. Of the four that were on fire, two died on the ſpot: the other two, the baſtard of Foix and the count de Jouy, were carried to their hôtels, and died two days afterward in great agonies.

Thus unfortunately did the wedding-feaſt end, although the married couple could no way be blamed. The duke of Orleans was alone in fault, who certainly intended not any harm when he held the torch ſo near them. His giddineſs cauſed it; and, when he witneſſed how unlucky he had been, he ſaid aloud,—'Liſten to me all that can hear me. Let no one be blamed for this unfortunate accident but myſelf: what has been done was through my fault: but woe is me that it has happened; and, had I foreſeen the conſequences, nothing on earth ſhould have induced me to do it.' The duke then followed the king, and made his excuſes, which were accepted. This melancholy event happened on the Tueſday before Candlemas-eve, in the year of grace 1392: it made a great noiſe in France and in other countries.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy were not preſent when the maſkers were ſet on fire, but were at their own hôtels, having taken leave of the king, queen and ladies. When on the morrow, it became public in Paris, the people wondered greatly, and ſaid that God had a ſecond time ſhewn his kind providence to the king, and that he ought now to put aſide theſe childiſh things, and occupy himſelf more ſeriouſly; for that he had too long played the boy, which was unbecoming a king

of

of France. The commonalty murmured among themſelves, and ſaid,—'What a narrow eſcape the king has had! if he had been burnt like the others, which might eaſily have happened, what would have become of his uncles? They may be aſſured not one of them would have eſcaped death, nor any knight found in Paris.'

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, hearing of this language, were aſtoniſhed and alarmed, and not without cauſe. They mounted their horſes, and rode to the hôtel de Saint Pol to the king, and congratulated him on his eſcape. They found him ſtill frightened, for he had not yet recovered the ſenſe of the peril he had been in the preceding night. He told them his fair aunt of Berry had ſaved him from being burnt, but that he was exceedingly grieved for the melancholy end of the count de Joüy, ſir Evan de Foix and ſir Charles de Poitiers. His uncles conſoled him, ſaying,—'My lord, what is done cannot be recovered; you muſt forget their deaths, and render thanks to God for the miraculous eſcape you yourſelf have had; for this event might have been nearly the death of the kingdom as well as your own. You may eaſily imagine what would have been the conſequences, when the commons of Paris hold ſuch language as has been reported to us; and God knows, that if you had periſhed, they would have murdered us all. Make yourſelf ready to go in royal ſtate, ſuitable to your rank, and ride in pilgrimage to the church of Nôtre Dame and ſhew

yourſelf

yourſelf to your people; we will accompany you, for the citizens of Paris are very deſirous to ſee you.'

The king replied, he would do as they had adviſed, and then entered into converſation with his brother the duke of Orleans, whom he much loved. His uncles received the duke kindly, blaming him a little for the youthful trick he had played. It ſeemed he was not diſpleaſed at their lecture, and declared he never intended or ſuſpected he was doing wrong.

On the point of nine o'clock, the king and his attendants mounted their horſes, and rode through Paris from the hôtel de Saint Pol, to the church of Nôtre Dame, to appeaſe the people, who were in great commotion, where he heard maſs, and made his offerings. He then returned to the hôtel de Saint Pol with his lords, who dined there.

This accident was by degrees forgotten, and obſequies, prayers and alms were made for the dead. Ah, count Gaſton de Foix! hadſt thou been alive and heard of the cruel death of this thy favourite ſon, thou wouldſt have been ſadly grieved, for thou didſt love him much, and I know not how thou wouldſt have been conſoled. All the lords and ladies in France, when they heard of this accident, were ſhocked and grieved.

But you muſt know, that pope Boniface and his cardinals at Rome were well pleaſed when they learnt the news, becauſe the king was contrary to their intereſts. They ſaid among themſelves, in a con-

a conſiſtory, that it was a ſecond puniſhment ſent by God, to make him take warning, for having ſupported the anti-pope of Avignon, Robert de Geneve, who was falſe, proud and preſumptuous, and had never done one good act in his whole life, but had deceived the world. The pope and cardinals reſolved to ſend in a ſecret manner and without pomp, a learned friar to the king of France, well inſtructed how to ſpeak and preach, to attempt to bring him and the French nation back to the way of ſalvation. They maintained, that he was now gone aſtray, and that being the greateſt king in Chriſtendom, the church ought to be enlightened and ſupported by him more than by any other.

They ſelected a devout and ſenſible man, whom they ordered to go into France; but, before his departure, they fully inſtructed him what to ſay and how to act. This was not ſo quickly done, nor did the envoy ſoon arrive, for the diſtance was great, and he had many different ſtates to paſs through. It was beſide neceſſary that the friar, who was a Franciſcan monk, ſhould know if the king of France were willing to ſee him before he ſet out.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

THE DUCHESS OF BERRY SUPPORTS THE LORD DE LA RIVIERE, IN OPPOSITION TO THE DUCHESS OF BURGUNDY.

WE will return to the affairs of France, and ſay how they were going on. Notwithſtanding the king's recovery, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy did not deſiſt from their attempts to ruin that valiant and prudent knight, the lord de la Riviere. He and ſir John le Mercier were ſtill confined in the Baſtille of Saint Anthony, under the care of the viſcount d'Achy; and it was current through Paris, that they would be put to death, inſomuch that it was daily expected they would be delivered over to the provoſt of the Châtelet, and when once this was done nothing could prevent them from being publicly beheaded as traitors to the crown of France. From the information I then had, I am convinced their execution would have taken place, had not the grace of God been ſhewn them, and the ducheſs of Berry exerted herſelf ſo much. This good lady was inceſſant in her entreaties for la Riviere, who had carried her to France and concluded her marriage, but not without great difficulty, with the duke of Berry. Sir John le Mercier was therefore fortunate in his ſituation to ſhare the benefits of her

her exertions. She frequently, with tears, addreſſed her lord, ſaying, 'that he was inſtigated by the malicious and envious inſinuations of the enemies of la Riviere to keep him ſo long in priſon, and confiſcate his inheritance. Ah, my lord, you make him a very ungrateful return for all the pains he took in bringing about our marriage, when you thus conſent to his deſtruction. At leaſt, if you take his property, ſpare his life; for, if he be executed for the charges that are ſo unjuſtly made againſt him, I ſhall never again enjoy happineſs. My lord, I do not ſay this from any feigned motive, but I really feel that it will weigh moſt heavily on my mind. I therefore pray God you will take proper meaſures for his deliverance.'

The duke perceiving ſhe was in earneſt, and that her arguments were good, abated greatly his hatred to the lord de la Riviere, who would ſooner have obtained his liberty; but they were deſirous of putting to death ſir John le Mercier, and they could not puniſh one without the other. This ſir John le Mercier had wept ſo long in priſon, that he had almoſt loſt his eye-ſight.

Had the ducheſs of Burgundy been liſtened to they would have ſuffered a diſgraceful and public death, without hopes of mercy, for ſhe hated them becauſe they had, with ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, adviſed the king of France to make the expedition into Brittany, to deſtroy her couſin the duke. She ſaid, that Cliſſon, le Mercier and la Riviere were

the

the cauſe of the king's illneſs, which would never have happened, had they not perſuaded him to undertake the war againſt Brittany.

You muſt know, that although the king was now in a tolerably good ſtate of mental and bodily health, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy did not reſign the government of the kingdom; and, as they had all the weight, they determined to have the profit alſo. To this end, they placed only their creatures about the king's perſon, who was but a king in name, for the two dukes took on themſelves to manage whatever concerned the realm. The ducheſs of Orleans was not pleaſed that the ducheſs of Burgundy ſhould have rank ſecond to the queen. She loved honours, and ſaid to thoſe in her confidence,—'The ducheſs of Burgundy has no right to take precedence of me; I am nearer the crown of France than ſhe is, for my lord is brother to the king. It may ſo happen that he ſhall be king; and, as I then muſt be queen, I know no reaſon why ſhe is thus eager of honours that are not belonging to her and to place me behind her.'

We will for a while leave theſe ladies, and ſpeak of ſome changes in France, and of ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, and of the manner in which he was treated.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

THE LORD DE COUCY REFUSES TO ACCEPT THE SWORD OF CONSTABLE IN THE ROOM OF CLISSON.—THE DUKES OF BERRY AND BURGUNDY INVEST THE LORD PHILIP D'ARTOIS, COUNT D'EU, WITH IT, IN CONSIDERATION OF HIS MARRIAGE WITH THE LADY MARY OF BERRY, WIDOW OF THE LORD LOUIS DE BLOIS.

YOU have before heard that the conſtable was ſummoned publicly by the parliament of Paris, after an adjournment of fifteen days between each ſummons, and how commiſſioners were ſent in purſuit of him to Brittany, but in vain, for he concealed himſelf from them. Had they been able to have ſpoken to him, they would have ſerved him perſonally with the orders of the court, and laid hands on him, according to the inſtructions they had received.

When, on their return, they had given an account of their miſſion to the parliament, it was determined by the court and lords of parliament, that ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, conſtable of France, had forfeited the protection of the court, and ſhould be baniſhed France, and deprived of all offices and poſſeſſions he held within that kingdom; for that he had contumaciouſly refuſed obedience to the ſummons of the great chamber,

though ſealed with their ſeal, and alſo had refuſed to ſend back his ſword of office.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, with their councils, who all hated the conſtable, and wiſhed his ruin, ſaid they would provide a remedy; for the office of conſtable was ſo noble, and of ſuch weight, it could not long remain vacant, for fear of accidents that might happen.

The lord de Coucy was thought the moſt proper perſon to fill it; but he excuſed himſelf, and refuſed poſitively to accept of it, though he ſhould be forced to leave France. When they ſaw he was determined they looked elſewhere. At this time a treaty of marriage was in agitation between the lord Philip d'Artois and the young counteſs de Dunois, the widow of the lord Louis de Blois, and the king of France was well inclined that this marriage with his couſin ſhould take place, but the duke of Berry refuſed his conſent; for the county of Eu is but of ſmall value, in compariſon of what ſhe was intitled to from her firſt union, and he looked to marry her more nobly. To ſay the truth, the counteſs was for beauty and goodneſs, and every thing belonging to a noble lady, worthy of the higheſt rank.

The duke of Berry, however, was unwilling to anger the king of France, who knew well that he was ſolicited by many perſons for the hand of his daughter: among whom were the young duke of Lorraine, the count d'Armagnac, and the eldeſt ſon of the count de Foix and de Bearn. The king was averſe to all theſe propoſals, and ſaid

to

to the duke of Berry,—'Fair uncle of Berry, we are not willing that our couſin, your daughter, ſhould be ſettled at a diſtance from the fleurs de lis. We will provide a marriage for her, that ſhall be ſuitable in all reſpects. We ſee her with pleaſure near us; and it becometh her not to leave her mother-in-law, as they are nearly of the ſame age.' Theſe words and others cooled the duke's intentions of marrying his daughter otherwiſe than as it pleaſed the king, who leant to his couſin, the lord Philip d'Artois. He was a young and gallant knight, and had acquired great renown in arms, in the different expeditions he had made, as well near home as beyond ſea, and was alſo much in the favour of the knights and ſquires of France.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy agreed, that if the king would give to their couſin of Artois the office of conſtable of France, which was now vacant, from the ſentence againſt ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, the marriage with the lady Mary ſhould take place; for, in caſe he were conſtable, he would be wealthy enough to keep a becoming ſtate. They reſolved to ſpeak to the king on this ſubject, which they did, as follows: 'My lord, your council recommends that our couſin, the lord Philip d'Artois, count d'Eu, be inveſted with the office of conſtable of France; for Cliſſon, by the ſentence of your judges in parliament, has forfeited it, and the office cannot longer be vacant without great prejudice to the realm. You are bounden, as well as ourſelves, to aſſiſt our couſin

of Artois, for he is very nearly related to us by blood; and, ſince ſuch an office is vacant, we cannot better fill it than by ſir Philip d'Artois, for he will ably and loyally execute it, and is much beloved by every knight and ſquire, being without envy or avarice.'

This ſpeech was very agreeable to the king, who gaily replied, that he would think of it, and, if the office was to be diſpoſed of, he would rather the count d'Eu had it than any other. Things remained ſome time in this ſtate; but the king was continually ſolicited by his uncles, who were deſirous of advancing ſir Philip d'Artois, and degrading ſir Oliver de Cliſſon; for the duke of Berry hated him for the death of Bethiſac, and the duke of Burgundy for his oppoſition to the duke of Brittany; but the ducheſs of Burgundy was yet more inveterate againſt him than her lord.

The king at length gave his aſſent, on condition the duke of Berry gave him his daughter. But, before matters had proceeded thus far, in order to avoid diſguſting the king, and to ſatisfy the duke of Orleans, who ſtrongly ſupported the lord de Cliſſon, ſir William des Bordes, ſir William Martel, both knights of the king's chamber, and ſir Philip de Savoiſis, knight to the duke of Berry, were again ſent to Brittany, to ſpeak with ſir Oliver de Cliſſon in the king's name.

Theſe knights, having made their preparations, took their road through Angers, where they met the queen of Jeruſalem and John of Brittany, who hand-

handſomely entertained them, in honour of the king. They remained at Angers two days, and inquired where they could find the lord de Cliſſon, for they had a very courteous meſſage to deliver to him from the king alone, who had ordered them to ſpeak with him. They replied, that they had not any poſitive intelligence where he was; but they ſuppoſed he muſt be in one of his caſtles in Brittany: that he did not conſtantly remain in any one, but moved from one to another.

At their departure, the knights took leave of the queen, her ſon Charles, prince of Tarentum, and John of Brittany, count de Penthievre, and continued their journey to Rennes. The duke of Brittany had ſhut himſelf up with his ducheſs in Vannes, without making any excurſions abroad for fear of ambuſcades, and meeting his adverſary Cliſſon, as they were carrying on a murderous war againſt each other. When their parties met, mercy was ſhewn by neither, and the field was gained by the death of their opponents: if, therefore, he felt alarmed, he had cauſe for it; for, although the duke was ſovereign of the country, there was not a knight or ſquire that would bear arms againſt the lord de Cliſſon. They diſſembled with the duke, ſaying, the quarrel did not any way concern them, and ſtaid at home without interfering. This the duke was forced to put up with.

When the knights arrived at Rennes, they aſked where they could for certain find ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, but no one could poſitively anſwer them.

They reſolved to ride to château Joſſelin, and were well received by the vaſſals of ſir Oliver, out of reſpect to the king of France. They inquired after their lord, and where they could ſee him, for they were ſent by the king and the duke of Orleans to ſpeak with him. They either would not, or could not give them any ſatisfactory account; but ſaid, in excuſe for themſelves and ſir Oliver,—'Certainly, my lords, not one of us knows where to find him: to-day he is at one place, to-morrow at another. You may ſafely ride all over Brittany, ſince you come from the king; and all the caſtles and houſes of our lord will be thrown open to you.'

Perceiving they could not obtain any further information, they left château Joſſelin, and rode to all the caſtles, both great and ſmall, of the lord de Cliſſon, but without learning any thing more. They then waited on the duke and ducheſs at Vannes, who gave them a hearty welcome; but they only ſtaid half a day with them, without diſcovering the object of their ſecret miſſion, nor was the duke very inquiſitive about their coming. They did not ſee ſir Peter Craon. On taking leave of the duke and ducheſs, they ſet out on their return to Paris to the king and lords, who were expecting them.

They gave an account to the king and the duke of Orleans, of having viſited all the towns and caſtles of the lord de Cliſſon without ſeeing or gaining any certain intelligence of him. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy were pleaſed at hearing

hearing this, and would not have wiſhed it otherwiſe.

Shortly afterward, the marriage was conſummated between the lord Philip d'Artois and the lady Mary of Berry. He was appointed conſtable of France, to enjoy all the privileges and emoluments of that office, although ſir Oliver de Cliſſon had not reſigned it nor ſent back his ſword of office. He perſiſted that he was ſtill conſtable, for that he had never done any thing againſt the king or crown of France that could have deprived him of it. Things, therefore, remained in this ſtate.

CHAP. XVI.

THE CONSTABLE DE CLISSON, DURING HIS ABSENCE FROM FRANCE, WAGES WAR ON THE DUKE OF BRITTANY.

SIR Oliver de Cliſſon was ſoon informed that the count d'Eu was nominated conſtable of France, and was to do the duty and receive the profits from the date of his appointment, with the conſent of the king of France, and that he had married the daughter of the duke of Berry, widow of lord Lewis of Blois. To all this he was perfectly indifferent, for he felt that his loyalty and honour were as firm as ever, and that he had never done any thing to

forfeit either againſt the king or crown of France, but that all theſe proceedings originated in the hatred and malice of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, which were ſo great that they could not conceal them.

This determined the lord de Cliſſon to continue his war with prudence and vigour againſt the duke of Brittany. It was ſevere and bloody, for neither party, when they met, made a ſham of fighting, but killed each other without mercy. The lord de Cliſſon rode frequently from one of his caſtles to another, and laid more ambuſcades than the duke, finding himſelf ſuperior in numbers to oppoſe him. None of the Breton chivalry would interfere by bearing arms on either ſide; but, when the duke ſent for them, they came to know what he wanted. He demanded from them aid and advice to correct his vaſſal, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, who had greatly miſbehaved himſelf towards him. The barons of Brittany, ſuch as the viſcount de Rohan, the lord de Dinant, ſir Hermen de Lyon, and many more, excuſed themſelves, ſaying, they were unintereſted in this quarrel, and would not therefore bear arms againſt the lord de Cliſſon; but that they would heartily labour to mediate between the duke and him, if they knew how, or ſaw any probability of eſtabliſhing peace between them.

The duke ſeeing he could no way prevail on them to join him, and that in this warfare he was loſing more men than the lord de Cliſſon, conſented to ſend the above named barons to treat with him, and bring him, under ſafe paſſports, to Vannes, that they

they might confer together. They were to add, that he would find him courteous and well inclined to liſten to any reaſonable terms; and, if he had treated him with contempt, he wonld make ſuch reparations as thoſe he addreſſed ſhould think proper.

The knights willingly undertook the miſſion, for the ſake of doing good, and ſet out in ſearch of ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, whom I believe they found at château Joſſelin. They told him the meſſage they were charged with from the duke, and urged him ſtrongly to accept of peace; for a war between them was very unbecoming, diſpleaſing to the nobles, and highly oppreſſive to the lower orders in Brittany. 'Sir Oliver,' ſaid they, 'we are thus preſſing, in the hope that you will be pleaſed to wait on our lord; and, for your ſafety and ſecure return, we pledge ourſelves to remain in your caſtle of Joſſelin, without ever ſtirring beyond the gates. We imagine, that when our lord and you ſhall confer together, you will very ſpeedily ſettle your differences, for we left him with the beſt intentions towards you.'

To this ſpeech, ſir Oliver replied,—'My good ſirs, what advantage can my death be to you? Do you think I know not the duke of Brittany? Moſt certainly I do; and he is too haughty and revengeful, whatever he may have aſſured you relative to my ſecurity and ſafe return, not to reſolve the moment I ſhall be in his preſence to have me put to death, in ſpite of his promiſes to you; and, if I be killed, your fate will be the ſame, for my people will

will of courſe retaliate on you. It is, therefore, much better we run not ſuch riſks. I will guard myſelf well againſt him; and let him, if he pleaſe, do the ſame.'

'Fair couſin,' replied ſir Charles de Dinant, 'you may ſay what you pleaſe; we have not ſeen him ſhew any wiſh to have you killed, if he could converſe with you in the manner we have propoſed, but, on the contrary, the ſtrongeſt deſire to accommodate all matters of diſpute. We therefore, for him and for ourſelves, beg you will conſent to it.'

Sir Oliver anſwered,—'I believe firmly, that you wiſh me every good; but, on the ſecurity he offers through you, I will not advance one ſtep. However, ſince you are all ſo earneſt in the buſineſs, for which it behoves me to thank you, I will mention on what terms I will come to him; and you ſhall, if they be agreeable to you, carry them back as my final anſwer. On your return, you will tell the duke, that I will not accept other pledge for my ſafety than his only ſon, who is betrothed to a princeſs of France. Let him ſend him hither to remain under the guard of my men, in château Joſſelin, until I be returned, and I will then ſet out to wait on him. This mode is more agreeable to me than any other, and alſo more reaſonable; for were you to remain here as hoſtages, as you offer, who would there be to negotiate the treaty? or who would be the mediators between us? and how, without your interference, ſhall we ever come to an agreement?'

When

When the three barons ſaw he was determined, they took leave of the lord de Cliſſon, and returned to Vannes, to relate to the duke what ſir Oliver had ſaid. In regard to ſending his ſon to château Joſſelin, the duke abſolutely refuſed, and the war continued on the ſame footing as before, ſo that no merchants or others dared to travel through the country. All commerce was at a ſtand in Brittany, which was ſeverely felt in the cities and large towns: even the labourers in huſbandry were alſo in a ſtate of idleneſs.

The ducheſs of Burgundy aſſiſted her couſin as much as ſhe could with men at arms from Burgundy and elſewhere, for the duke could not prevail on his ſubjects to take part in the war, and the knights and ſquires, excepting thoſe of his houſehold, diſſembled their opinions.

On the other hand, the duke of Orleans, who was attached to the conſtable, ſupported him underhand, and ſent him men at arms and good courſers to re-mount his men. Sir Oliver made more frequent excurſions than the duke, and it happened that he met with two of the duke's ſquires who were going on his buſineſs: one of them was called Bernard, and the other Yvonnet: they could neither fly nor avoid falling into ſir Oliver's hands, who was rejoiced at it, for he was well acquainted with them. One had in former times done him a ſervice, the other the contrary, which he then recollected. They were much frightened at being thus caught, and ſir Oliver addreſſed them,—'Doſt thou remember, Yvonnet, how

how cruelly thou behavedſt to me in the caſtle of Ermine, near Vannes, when thou didſt ſhut me up in a dungeon. Thou, Bernard, then hadſt pity on me, and pulling off thy coat, becauſe I was only in my doublet and lying on the pavement, gaveſt it me, to cover me from the cold. I will now return that friendſhip, by ſparing thy life; but as for this wicked traitor, Yvonnet, who might have avoided, if he pleaſed, the cruelty of his conduct, he ſhall ſuffer.' At theſe words, he drew his dagger, and ſlew him on the ſpot. He then continued his courſe without touching the ſervants.

Another time, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, with about three hundred lances, was riding before the caſtle of Auray, in which were the duke and ducheſs. He met about forty of the duke's varlets, who had tied their horſes to trees, for it was near Midſummer, and, having cut ſome hay, were truſſing it up to carry, like foragers, to their lodgings. Sir Oliver galloped among them, without other harm than the fright he put them to, and ſaid,—'How dare you take the field, and carry away the harveſt of the farmers? You have not ſown this, and are cutting it before it is ripe: you have begun your harveſt too ſoon. Come take up your ſcythes, and mount your horſes: for this time I will do you no harm; but go and tell the duke of Brittany, who I know is in Auray, to come hither, or ſend his men to receive me; and that Cliſſon informs him he will remain here until ſun-ſet.'

The varlets were happy in their eſcape, for they thought they ſhould all be killed, therefore they picked

picked up their ſcythes, mounted their horſes, and returned to the duke in Auray. I doubt not they punctually delivered the meſſage, but the duke neither ſallied out himſelf, nor ſent any of his men to meet ſir Oliver de Cliſſon. Such ſkirmiſhes paſſed often between them, but the principal inhabitants never interfered.

We will now leave the affairs of Brittany, and return to thoſe of France and England.

CHAP. XVII.

A TREATY OF PEACE IS CONCLUDED BBTWEEN THE KINGS OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND, THROUGH THE MEDIATION OF THEIR UNCLES.

YOU have before heard of the conferences that were held at Amiens on a peace between France and England, and on what terms the duke of Lancaſter had gone back. The Engliſh were unwilling to conſent to a peace, notwithſtanding the king, the dukes of Lancaſter and York, and all the commiſſioners who had been at Amiens, ſtrongly urged it; for the majority of the commons were deſirous of war; and two thirds of the young knights and ſquires knew not how to employ themſelves: they had learnt idleneſs, and looked to war as the means of ſupport. However, they were

were forced to ſubmit to the opinions of the king, his uncles, and the more intelligent part of the nation.

The duke of Lancaſter, conſidering the matter, as well in regard to the welfare of his two daughters, the queens of Caſtille and Portugal, as in reſpect to his nephew, the king of England, who was greatly inclined to peace, took much pains to bring it about, becauſe he thought it would likewiſe be for the honour and advantage of England.

On the part of France, the duke of Burgundy greatly exerted himſelf, for he found the whole weight of the government reſted on him; ſince his nephews, the king and the duke of Orleans, were weak in body and mind. He was of great power by his marriage with the heireſs of Flanders, and daily expecting to inherit Brabant alſo. If, therefore, in times to come, theſe countries ſhould quarrel with France, and unite themſelves, as they had formerly done, with England, they would be an overmatch for her.

The duke of Burgundy was a long-ſighted politician, as I was told by thoſe who ought to know; and he and the duke of Lancaſter effected that the conferences ſhould be renewed at Leulinghen, where they had before been held, and that the commiſſioners ſhould have full powers to conclude a peace. The conferences were to be holden in the enſuing month of May, at Leulinghen, in the year of grace 1393. It had been thus agreed to by both

both parties, and commiſſioners were appointed by each king.

On the part of the king of England, were his two uncles the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter: this laſt was very popular with the commons of England, and all others who preferred war to peace. From among the prelates were ſelected the archbiſhop of York, the biſhop of London, and other clerks learned in the laws to expound the Latin letters.

Theſe lords* repaired to Calais ſoon after St. George's day, which is always celebrated at Windſor with great feaſtings by the knights of the blue garter. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy made preparations for coming to Boulogne, that they might be near at hand to the place of conference.

The king of France ſhewed great impatience for peace, as the wars had laſted too long; and he ſaid to his uncles, that he would fix his reſidence near to Leulinghen, to prove how eager he was in the matter, and to be ready at hand if neceſſary. It was propoſed that he ſhould be at Saint Omer, on the frontiers of Calais, or at Therouenne, Montreuil or Abbeville; but the laſt place was determined on for his reſidence, as it was large and convenient, and the court could eaſily be lodged on the banks of the beautiful river Somme.

---

* In the Fœdera the commiſſioners are,—the duke of Lancaſter,—the duke of Gloceſter,—Walter biſhop of Durham,—Thomas earl Marſhal, governor of Calais,—ſir Thomas Percy,—ſir Lewis Clifford,—Richard Rouhall, doctor of laws.

When

When this was fixed, great preparations were made for the reception of the king in Abbeville; and the abbey of Saint Peter, as being a large and handſome edifice of the benedictine monks, was choſen for his lodgings. Thither came the king of France, accompanied by his brother, the duke of Orleans, and ſir Reginald de Corbie*, chancellor of France. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, with the other commiſſioners, were at Boulogne, and the duke of Lancaſter and his company at Calais.

It was a handſome ſhow to ſee the ſtate and array of the French and Engliſh commiſſioners, when they opened the conferences at Leulinghen, between Boulogne and Calais. There were tents and pavilions erected for them to take refreſhments, or ſleep in on occaſion; and two or three days in the week the commiſſioners met, and were frequently nine hours diſcuſſing the preliminaries for a peace, in a large and handſome pavilion that had been pitched for their aſſembling in.

It was told me, (for I John Froiſſart, the writer of this hiſtory, was at Abbeville, that I might learn the truth of what was paſſing) by thoſe who were well informed, that after the procurations from the two kings had been verified as to the commiſſioners' powers of concluding a peace, the

* I imagine this muſt be a miſtake, though the MSS. are the ſame; for Pierre de Giac was chancellor after ſir Miles des Dormans, and died 1407. Arnaud de Corbie ſucceeded him, and died 1413.—HENAULT.

French

French propoſed that Calais ſhould be ſo demoliſhed, as that it could never again be made habitable. The dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter inſtantly anſwered, that they needed not have made this propoſition, for that Calais would be the very laſt town the crown of England would part with; and that if they intended this as a baſis for treating, there was an end to the buſineſs, for they would not hear further on the ſubject. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, perceiving their couſins of England ſo determined, dropped the matter, for they found it would be vain to preſs it, and diſcourſed on other topics.

The Engliſh, for a long time, demanded reſtitution of every thing that had been yielded to the late king Edward, and, in addition to theſe territories, the balance of the ranſom that had been due when the war was renewed between France and England. This was reſiſted ſtrenuouſly by the French dukes, who argued themſelves, and by their learned clerks, on the unreaſonableneſs of the demand. The two dukes and the chancellor of France replied with temper,—'that with regard to the firſt demand, that the whole of the territory that had been yielded to the king Edward ſhould be reſtored, it was impoſſible; for the inhabitants of the towns, caſtles and lands, which had been aſſigned to England by the treaty of Bretigny, and afterwards confirmed at Calais, in the year 1360, were too adverſe to ſuch reſtoration; and the king of France, to whom they had voluntarily ſurrendered themſelves, had, in con-

equence, accepted their homage, granted them protection, and ſuch other privileges, on his royal word, as could not be broken; and that, if they wiſhed for peace, they muſt offer other preliminaries.

It was then reſolved, between the four dukes, on whom it ſolely depended, whether there ſhould be peace or war, that each party ſhould reduce to writing their different grounds of treating, and mutually deliver them to each other, to conſider of them at their leiſure, with their clerks, learned in the laws, who had accompanied them, and determine on what parts they could agree to, and what would not be accepted. This was aſſented to by all; for the dukes were before much fatigued in hearing the various papers read and diſcuſſed; more eſpecially the Engliſh commiſſioners; for, as it was carried on in French, they were not ſo well uſed to the fineſſe and double meanings of that language as the natives, who turned and twiſted it to their own advantage at pleaſure. The Engliſh oppoſed this, for they wiſhed every thing to be made clear and intelligible to every one.

The French accuſed the Engliſh of having, at various times, infringed the articles of the peace, and offered to prove it by written documents, and the word of their king, as well as by the judgment of the pope. This made the Engliſh more diligent to have every thing made out plain; and, whenever they found any thing obſcure in the propoſals that had been given them from the French commiſſioners, which they examined carefully and

at

at leiſure, they made their clerks demand from the dukes of Berry and Burgundy how they underſtood ſuch expreſſions; for the Engliſh dukes would not paſs over an article that had the leaſt tendency to a double meaning; and whatever they did not clearly underſtand they had eraſed in their preſence, declaring they would not allow of any thing that could bear a miſconſtruction, for that the French, who had been from their youth trained to ſuch things, were more ſubtle than the Engliſh.

So many difficulties greatly lengthened the conferences; and the Engliſh held themſelves obliged to demand reſtitution of all the lands dependant on Aquitaine, and their profits ſince the commencement of the war, as they had been charged to do by the parliament of England. This the French would not agree to: they were willing, indeed, to yield the countries of Tarbes, Bigorre, Agen and the Agenois, with Perigord, but declared they would never reſtore Cahors, Rouergue, Quercy and Limouſin, nor give up any part of Ponthieu or Guines more than the Engliſh poſſeſſed at the preſent moment.

On theſe grounds things remained: they ſtood out for upwards of fifteen days, and only came to the concluſion that it ſhould be laid before the two kings: to forward the buſineſs, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy offered to ſet out for Abbeville, to inform the king of France of all that had paſſed; and, if he would acquieſce in the Engliſh propoſals, they would not oppoſe them. They entreated, on

the other hand, their couſins to write to king Richard, and amicably let him know what they had done; for he had, for two years paſt, ſhewn the moſt anxious deſire for peace between England, France and all their allies.

The two dukes promiſed compliance; but you muſt know, as I was well informed, the duke of Gloceſter was more difficult to perſuade than his brother, and he had been purpoſely choſen his colleague, by thoſe who preferred war to peace, becauſe they knew he would not aſſent to any thing that was in the leaſt diſhonourable to his country.

The four dukes then ſeparated in a moſt friendly manner, having been nine days in conference. The Engliſh commiſſioners returned to Calais, and the French to Boulogne, whence they ſet out for Abbeville. They found there the king of France, who was amuſing himſelf, he having taken a liking to the place. There is ſcarcely any city in France more pleaſantly ſituated; and within it is a handſome incloſed garden, partly ſurrounded by the river Somme, in which the king ſpent much of his time, and often ſupped there, telling his brother and council that the air of Abbeville had done his health great good.

At this time, Léon king of Armenia was with the king of France: he was juſt come from Greece and the frontiers of his own kingdom, into which he dared not venture; for the Turks had conquered, and kept poſſeſſion of it as well as other places, in defiance of the world, except-

excepting the ſtrong town of Conich*, ſituated on the ſea-ſhore, which the Genoeſe had ſtrongly garriſoned and guarded againſt the Turks; for, if they had poſſeſſion of this place, they would grievouſly haraſs by ſea the Cyprotes, and other Chriſtians of Rhodes and Candia.

The king of Armenia would gladly have ſeen a peace concluded between France and England, that ſuch knights and ſquires as wiſhed for deeds of arms might travel to Greece, and aſſiſt him in the recovery of his kingdom. The king received kindly his two uncles at Abbeville, and made them good cheer. He aſked how the treaty was going on, and how they were themſelves. They having related to him the true ſtate of affairs, and how all had paſſed, he was well contented, and teſtified his joy and wiſhes for peace.

In like manner, the two Engliſh dukes, on their arrival at Calais, had written to the king of England the demands and anſwers made to them, which, being ſealed, were forwarded to him. In reply to which, the king had deſired they would proceed in the treaty, for the war had laſted long enough, to the ruin of the country, and the ſlaughter of chivalry, and the great weakening of Chriſtendom. 'This might,' he added, 'have ſerious conſequences; for Bajazet with his Turks were advancing towards the kingdom of Hungary, and were now in Wallachia, as letters to France and England had brought information.'

---

* Conich. The MSS. have Courch.

The time was now come for the return of the four dukes and commiſſioners to the renewal of the conferences at Leulinghen. With the French lords came the king of Armenia, to remonſtrate with the Engliſh on his diſtreſſing ſituation: he was well known to the duke of Gloceſter, when he had viſited England during the threatened invaſion from France, who had ſhewn him many civilities, and carried him to a beautiful caſtle he had in Eſſex called Pleſhy. The dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter received him well, particularly the laſt, on account of former acquaintance. They patiently liſtened to all his greivances, and replied ſo graciouſly that he was well contented with them. At theſe conferences many different propoſals were made, and the cardinal de Luna*, in hopes of being heard by the commiſſioner, had made a long ſtay at Abbeville, whither he had been ſent as legate by pope Clement for the affairs of the church. He was lodged at the convent of the Cordeliers, on the river Somme. The French wanted to inſert in their preliminaries ſome articles relative to the church and to the ſupport of this Robert de Geneve, who ſtiled himſelf pope: but when the Engliſh dukes obſerved this, they ſtepped forward with courage, ſaying to their couſins of France,—'Take away this legate: we want not to hear his ſpeeches: it has not been without

* The cardinal de Luna, an Arragonian, was anti-pope after the death of Clement, under the name of Benedict XIII. See more of his turbulent life in Muratori, &c.

fully

fully weighing their merits that we have determined which of the popes to obey. We deſire, therefore, not to hear any thing on this ſubject; and, ſhould he again come forward under your protection, we will break up the conference and return home.'

From this time, nothing more was ſaid of the cardinal, who remained quiet in Abbeville. The lords now puſhed forward the treaty with ſuch ſucceſs that it was brought to a happy concluſion, and to the ſatisfaction of all parties.

The four dukes ſaw their reſpective kings were anxious for peace, more eſpecially the king of France, who, when the duke of Lancaſter had taken leave of him at Amiens during the former conferences, had ſaid,—'Fair couſin, I beg you to exert yourſelf that there may be a ſolid peace between my brother of England and me, that we may aſſiſt our couſin the king of Hungary againſt Bajazet, who is ſo powerful in Turkey.'

The duke of Lancaſter had promiſed the king to do his utmoſt; and indeed it was through his remonſtrances with his nephew, king Richard, his brothers, and the parliament, that the conferences were renewed at Leulinghen, to eſtabliſh a peace, if poſſible, to the honour of England. The duke of Gloceſter was much colder in the matter, and carefully noticed all the contentious ſpeeches of the French, ſaying, the French always wiſhed to fight with both hands. He made ſo ſtrong an oppoſition, that the adverſe party perceiving it, ſent a ſquire of honour, and of the

bed chamber and council of the king of France, to the duke: his name was Robert l'Hermite; and this is what he ſaid, for the duke related to me the words at his caſtle of Pleſhy. 'My lord, for the love of God do not longer oppoſe a peace. You ſee how diligent our lords of France are in promoting it, and it will be charity in you to join them, for the war has laſted too long; and, when kings wiſh for peace, their relations and ſubjects ought to obey.' 'Robert, Robert,' replied the duke of Gloceſter, 'I wiſh not to prevent a peace; but you Frenchmen uſe ſuch ſpecious words, beyond our underſtanding, that, when you will, you may urge them as ſignifying war or peace as you ſhall chooſe. In this manner has the buſineſs hitherto been conducted, diſſembling always until you have gained your end. If my lord, the king, had believed me, and the majority of thoſe who are bound to ſerve him, there never would have been peace with France, until you had reſtored to us all you have taken through treacherous cauſes, as is known to God, and to all who will ſearch into the buſineſs. But, ſince my lord inclines to peace, you are in the right to preſs it forward; it is juſt that we ſhould alſo approve of it, and ſince peace is ſo much wiſhed for are we here aſſembled: let it, however, be will kept on your ſide, as it ſhall be on ours.' On ſaying this, the duke of Gloceſter went away. Robert l'Hermite, at the ſame time, took his leave, and returned to his countrymen. I will not protract the ſubject

longer

longer, but come to the concluſion, as the matter requires it.

The four dukes, having full powers from their reſpective monarchs, to conclude a truce or peace, continued their conferences with ſuch ſucceſs, that the report in Abbeville was current of a peace having been made between France, England and their allies. But I, the author of this hiſtory, who at the time reſided in Abbeville, to learn news, could never underſtand that a peace had been concluded: only the truce had been prolonged for four years, on ſea and land, between all the parties. It was imagined that, before the expiration of this term, all the territories and lordſhips in Languedoc, that were to revert to the kings of England and their heirs for ever, would be ſurrendered to king Richard, or to his commiſſioners.

In return for the giving up ſo many towns, caſtles and lordſhips, which had been agreed to by the commiſſioners for peace, the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter engaged that their captains, of whatever nation they might be, who held poſſeſſion of different forts in France, that were to revert to the king of France, ſhould evacuate them, and ceaſe from carrying on any war under the name and pretext of the king of England or the Engliſh. All the articles of the truce were fairly written out, ſigned and ſealed by the different lords, and copies of them ſent to the two kings, before they parted, at Leulinghen.

The

The king of England was very impatient to hear of peace being concluded, and his uncles, knowing this, determined to ſend him an expreſs with the news: they called to them a herald, named Marche, who was king at arms in England, and wrote to the king by him the whole detail of what had been agreed on, and ſigned by both parties. The herald was rejoiced to receive theſe letters from the dukes, and, leaving the Engliſh tents, rode to Calais, where he hired a fiſhing-boat, and, by the grace of God, a favourable wind, and the exertions of the fiſhermen, was ſpeedily landed at Dover. He then continued his journey until he came to London, where he found the king. On his arrival, he was introduced into the king's chamber, becauſe he was come from Calais, where the king's uncles were negotiating a peace. He preſented his letters; and the king, having peruſed them, was ſo well pleaſed with their contents, and the good news he had brought, that he gave him very rich gifts, and a handſome annuity, as the herald told me afterwards when riding with him through part of England.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

THE TREATY OF PEACE IS NEARLY BROKEN OFF BY POPE BONIFACE, AND BY THE KING OF FRANCE RELAPSING INTO HIS FORMER ILLNESS.

LET us return to the commiſſioners from France and England at Leulinghen. When they pleaſed they lived in tents, which were prepared for them in great numbers and magnificence. The Engliſh were very attentive to the verification of the different papers, that nothing obſcure or doubtful might remain. They examined every paper, and had every expreſſion made clear before they ſigned them.

From an event that happened, the negotiations which had taken up ſo much time were near being broken off. I will ſay what it was; for in matters of hiſtory every thing ſhould be detailed, that the truth may be more apparent. You have heard that the king of France had made a long ſtay at Abbeville: he took pleaſure in the place, but his ſtay was prolonged on account of the treaty that was going forward at Leulinghen.

Juſt at the concluſion of the treaty, the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter declared it was the intention of king Richard and the parliament, that pope Boniface, who was acknowledged for the true pope by the Romans, Germans, Hungarians, Lombards,

Lombards, Venetians, Engliſh, and by all Chriſtendom except France, ſhould be received as ſuch, and the perſon who ſtiled himſelf pope Clement be degraded and condemned. This propoſal, the two dukes ſaid, they had been ſpecifically ordered to make by the three eſtates of England.

When the dukes of Berry and Burgundy heard this, to pleaſe their couſins of England, and to prevent the treaty from being interrupted, they deſired, in a friendly way, to have a little time to conſider what they had propoſed. It being granted, they conſulted together; and the duke of Burgundy eloquently and prudently anſwered as follows, to ſoften the matter to the Engliſh dukes: —'It does not ſeem to us any way proper that we ſhould intermix with our negotiations the diſpute between the two popes. My brother of Berry and myſelf are ſomewhat ſurpriſed how you could have propoſed it, for at the beginning of the conferences you objected to the preſence of the cardinal de Luna, who is now at Abbeville as legate from the pope, and refuſed to hear any thing he had to ſay. We had before determined that when the cardinals elected Urban for pope, and on his death Boniface, the elections were null, for no one either from your country or ours was ſummoned to them; and the election of him who calls himſelf Clement and reſides at Avignon is, from the ſame cauſe, in the like predicament. We do not deny that it would be great charity in thoſe who could attend to it, to appeaſe and put an end

to

to this ſchiſm in the church. But, in regard to ourſelves, we muſt refer the matter to the univerſity of Paris; and, when all our buſineſs here ſhall be concluded by a ſolid peace, we will, in conjunction with the council of our couſin the king of Germany, willingly attend to this matter, as you may do on your ſide.'

This reply of the duke of Burgundy was agreeable to the Engliſh dukes, for it ſeemed reaſonable, and they anſwered, 'You have well ſpoken: let the matter now reſt, and be as you ſay.' The negotiations were going on as well as before; but there fell out, juſt at the concluſion, a great hindrance by the king of France relapſing into the ſame frenzy by which he was afflicted in the preceding year. He had remained at Abbeville until near Midſummer, at the abbey of Saint Peter, paſſing his time in a variety of amuſements. The firſt that noticed his relaſpe was a Norman knight, called ſir William Martel, who was employed the moſt about the king's perſon.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy were at the time at Leulinghen or Boulogne, bringing the conference to a cloſe, or at leaſt finiſhing all that could be done this year. The moment the duke of Orleans perceived the ſtate of the king's health, he ſent information to his uncles by a favourite ſquire of his own, called Boniface, an agreeable man. The two dukes, on hearing this unfortunate intelligence, ſet out as ſpeedily as they could; for they had already taken leave of their couſins of England, who were returned to Calais to wait for information

information from the king of Navarre and the duke of Brittany.

It had been propoſed at the conferences, that as the caſtle of Cherbourg in Normandy, had been mortgaged to the king of England for ſixty thouſand nobles, who in conſequence had poſſeſſion, it ſhould be reſtored to the king of Navarre, on the king of France repaying the ſixty thouſand nobles; and in like manner was the caſtle of Breſt to be ſurrendered to the duke of Brittany. The dukes of Berry and Burgundy did not wait for the concluſion of theſe two articles, but haſtened to Abbeville, where, to their ſorrow, they found the king in a very poor ſtate of health.

The king's diſorder was kept ſecret as long as poſſible, but in ſuch caſes it is very ſoon publicly known.

The court at Abbeville was ſhortly diſperſed, and every one retired to his home. Councils were holden as to the proper place the king ſhould be conveyed to, and in reſpect to his management. The caſtle of Creil was again fixed on for his reſidence, whither he was carried in a litter. The weather was now ſo hot, that they reſted the day and only travelled the night ſeaſon: the king was attended to Creil by his brother and the duke of Berry. The duke of Burgundy went to Artois, and thence viſited Flanders, having met his ducheſs at the caſtle of Hêdin.

The lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier ſeemed entirely forgotten: no one ſpoke of them, nor interfered in their delivery from priſon. This

relaſpe

relapſe of the king had, however, greatly exculpated them for the accuſations of having been the cauſe of his firſt illneſs in the eyes of the public. The wiſeſt in France had now learnt, that from the weakneſs of his nerves, he was naturally inclined to this diſorder, which had been brought forward with greater force from the exceſſes he had indulged in. It was much regretted by thoſe who wiſhed his recovery that maſter William de Harſeley was no more, for his relatives knew not where to ſeek a prudent phyſician that was acquainted with his diſorder. It was, however, a matter of neceſſity to make the beſt uſe of ſuch as they had.

CHAP. XIX.

THE DEATH OF POPE CLEMENT AT AVIGNON.—THE ELECTION OF POPE BENEDICT.—A LEARNED CLERK, IN THE ARCHBISHOPRICK OF RHEIMS, SUPPORTS THE RIGHT OF THE SEE OF AVIGNON, BY HIS SPEECHES AND PREACHINGS.

IN the month of September, of this year, Robert de Geneve, whom we have called pope in our hiſtory, died at his palace in Avignon. It happened to him juſt as he had wiſhed, that he might die pope. He died indeed with the honour and ſtate I have mentioned, but whether he enjoyed

joyed theſe wrongfully or not, I ſhall not pretend to determine, for ſuch matters do not belong to me.

The cardinals at Avignon were much ſurpriſed at this event, and reſolved to form a conclave in haſte, and elect one from among themſelves as his ſucceſſor.

The health of the king of France was again beginning to return, to the great joy of all who loved him, and his good queen, who had been in great affliction. She was a valiant lady, whom God corrected and loved: ſhe had made many proceſſions, and given great alms, in hopes of his recovery, in ſeveral parts of France, but eſpecially in Paris.

The college of cardinals at Avignon, as I was then informed, elected pope the cardinal legate de Luna. To ſay the truth, he was a devout man, and of a contemplative life; but they had choſen him ſubject to the approbation of the king of France and his council, otherwiſe they would not have been able to maintain their election. Conſider how much the church muſt have been degraded by this ſchiſm, when thoſe who were, or ought to have been free, thus ſubjected themſelves to the will of others, whom they ſhould have commanded.

All the ſolemnities required at the coronation of a pope were paid to the cardinal de Luna, who took the name of Benedict. He offered a general pardon to all clergy who ſhould come to Avignon; and, by the advice of his cardinals, wrote letters

to

to the king of France, to announce his elevation to the papacy.

I heard that the king paid little attention to his letter; for he was not yet determined whether to acknowledge him for pope or no; and, to have the beſt advice on the occaſion, he ſummoned before him the moſt learned and prudent clerks of the univerſity of Paris.

Maſter John Gigencourt and maſter Peter Playons*, who were eſteemed the moſt learned and acute in the univerſity, told the king, as did others, that the ſchiſm in the church corrupted the Chriſtian faith; that the church ought not longer to be kept in this ſtate, for that all Chriſtendom ſuffered from it, but more particularly churchmen; and that it was unbecoming the univerſity to ſend to pope Benedict at Avignon, liſts of thoſe prieſts who had need of briefs. The king, on hearing their opinions, thought them reaſonable, and conſented that there ſhould be a ceſſation of ſuch liſts as were uſually ſent to the pope, until the diſputes between the two popes were ſettled: things therefore remained in this ſtate.

The duke of Berry, however, ſtrenuouſly ſupported the new pope; and all the clergy dependent on him acknowledged him for the true one; and many of his people were provided with pardons from this Benedict.

---

* In the muſeum MS. it is Gignicourt and Pierre de Lyons: in mine, the firſt as D. Sauvage, and the other Pierre de Palions.

The duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, the duke of Orleans, with many other great lords of France, diſſembled their real opinions on the ſubject to the king. Some through favour acknowledged Benedict, who was prodigal of his pardons, in order that the court of Avignon might thrive the more.

The duke of Brittany readily enough followed the opinion of the king of France; for he had been in former times ſo ſcandalized, by the information the earl of Flanders, his couſin, had given him of the rebellion in the church, that he would never allow of Clement being the true pope, although his clergy paid him obedience and acknowledged him. When any of the churches in France became vacant, the king diſpoſed of them to clergymen, without ever ſpeaking of it to pope Benedict, who, as well as his cardinals, was greatly ſurpriſed at ſuch conduct, and began to fear the king would deprive them of the benefices they held in his realm.

They reſolved, therefore, to ſend a well-inſtructed legate to France, to remonſtrate with the king and council on the ſtate of the church, and to learn their intentions, and likewiſe to aſſure them that the pope they had elected was only conditionally choſen, in caſe of his proving agreeable to the king, but that otherwiſe they would dethrone him, and exalt another more to his pleaſure.

About this period, the friar, whom I before mentioned to have been ſent by pope Boniface to the

the king of France, but without the pomp or ſtate of a legate, arrived at Paris, with the conſent of the king, who liſtened to his arguments and ſermons with pleaſure. The legate from Avignon, a ſubtle and eloquent clerk, was heard alſo by the king and his court: thoſe attached to the pope at Avignon took good care to puſh him forward, and contrived that he ſhould have audiences often.

It was the opinion of the council, but it was not without great difficulty the univerſity of Paris ſubſcribed to this opinion, that it would be a wiſe and prudent meaſure, if means could be found to make the rival popes reſign their dignities, as well as all the cardinals, and then ſelect the moſt learned and prudent among the clergy, from the empire of Germany, France, and other countries, who ſhould form a general council, and then, without favour or affection to any party, reſtore the church to its former unity, diſcipline and ſtability. They declared they ſaw no other way of deſtroying the ſchiſm; for the hearts of different lords were ſo ſwollen with pride, each would ſupport his own party.

This idea, which was propoſed in the preſence of the king, and the dukes of Orleans and Burgundy, in council, was approved of; and the king, having agreed to it, ſaid he would cheerfully write on the ſubject to the kings of Germany, Bohemia, Hungary and England; that he thought he could depend on the kings of Caſtille, Navarre, Arragon, Sicily, Naples and Scotland, obeying whatever pope he ſhould acknowledge. In conſequence of

this propoſition being adopted, the king of France ſent off ſpecial meſſengers with letters to the kings above mentioned, but anſwers were not returned to them ſo ſoon as expected.

During this interval, that learned clerk maſter John de Gigencourt died at the Sorbonne. The king of France, his court and the univerſity were very ſorry for the loſs, as his equal was not at Paris, and he would have been of ſingular ſervice in reforming the church, and bringing about an union.

At this time, there was at Avignon a clerk well ſkilled in ſcience, doctor of laws, and auditor of the palace: he was a native of the archbiſhoprick of Rheims, and called ſir John de Varennes. He was much advanced in the church for the ſervices he had rendered pope Clement and others, and was on the point of being a biſhop or cardinal. He had alſo been chaplain to a cardinal, called at Avignon Saint Peter of Luxembourg.

This John de Varennes, beneficed and advanced as he was, reſigned all, retaining only, for his ſubſiſtence, the canonry of our Lady at Rheims, which is worth, by reſidence, one hundred francs; otherwiſe nor more than thirty. He quitted Avignon, returned to his native country, and fixed his abode at the village of Saint Lye, near Rheims, where he led a devout life, preaching the faith and works of our Lord, and praiſing the pope of Avignon. He declared he was the true pope, condemning, by his ſpeeches, that of Rome. He was much attended to, and followed by the people,

people, who come to ſee him from all countries, for the ſober and holy life he led, faſting daily, and for the fine ſermons he preached. Some, however, ſaid, that the cardinals at Avignon had ſent him thither to ſupport their cauſe, and to exhibit the holineſs of his life, which was devout enough to have entitled him to be raiſed to the papacy.

Maſter John de Varennes would not allow himſelf to be called the holy man of Saint Lye, but ſimply the Auditor. He lived with his mother, and every day ſaid maſs very devoutly. All that was given him, for he aſked for nothing, he diſtributed in alms to the glory of God.

We will now leave him, and ſpeak of other matters.

CHAP. XX.

THE KING OF ENGLAND IS ADVISED TO MAKE A JOURNEY TO IRELAND,—AND TO SETTLE ON THE DUKE OF LANCASTER, AND HIS HEIRS FOR EVER, THE DUCHY OF AQUITAINE WITH ALL ITS DEPENDANCIES.

THE truces that had been agreed to between the kings of France and England, and their allies, were well obſerved on ſea and land. There were, however, ſome pillagers ſtill in Languedoc, who came from foreign countries, ſuch

Percy, the lords Deſpencer and Beaumont, ſir William Arundel, the archbiſhops of Canterbury and York, the biſhop of London, and of all thoſe who were entitled to be preſent, whether prelates or barons.

The duke of Lancaſter thanked, in the firſt place, the king his nephew, then his brothers, and the barons and prelates of the council. After which he began to make moſt ſumptuous preparations for croſſing the ſea, and taking poſſeſſion of the duchy the king had inveſted him with.

Purveyors were likewiſe buſy in preparing, on a large ſcale, for the king's expedition to Ireland; and thoſe lords who were to accompany him were ordered to make preparations of whatever things they might think neceſſary.

CHAP. XXI.

THE DEATH OF THE LADY ANNE OF BOHEMIA, QUEEN OF ENGLAND.—THE DUKE OF LANCASTER LANDS IN AQUITAINE, AND THE KING OF ENGLAND IN IRELAND.

THE king of England and the duke of Lancaſter were daily occupied in their preparations for leaving England, and had ſent their men and purveyances to the different ports they were to embark from; the one to Ireland, and the other

other to Aquitaine; but their expidition was delayed for about two months by an event I will now relate.

At this period, the lady Anne, queen of England, fell ſick, to the great diſtreſs of the king and her houſehold. Her diſorder increaſed ſo rapidly that ſhe departed this life on the feaſts of Whitſuntide, in the year of grace 1394. The king and all who loved her were greatly afflicted at her death. She was buried in the cathedral church of London*; but her obſequies were performed at leiſure, for the king would have them magnificently done. Abundance of wax was ſent for from Flanders to make flambeaux and torches, and the illumination was ſo great on the day of the ceremony that nothing was ever ſeen like to it before, not at the burial of the good queen Philippa nor of any other.

The king would have it ſo, becauſe ſhe was daughter to the king of Bohemia, emperor of Rome and of Germany. He was inconſolable for her loſs, as they mutually loved each other, having been married young. This queen left no iſſue, for ſhe had never borne children.

Thus in the ſame year were the king, the duke of Lancaſter and the earl of Derby made widowers.

---

* 'On the 7th of June, queen Anne died at Shene in Surry, and was buried at Weſtminſter. The king took her death ſo heavily, that beſides curſing the place where ſhe died, he did alſo, for anger, throw down the buildings, unto the which former kings, being weary of the city, were wont for pleaſure to reſort.'—*Stowe's Chronicle.*

There

There was no talk of the king's marrying again, for he would not hear of it. Although the expeditions to Ireland and Aquitaine were delayed by the queen's death, thoſe lords who were named to go to Ireland did not fail continuing their preparations; and, as their purveyances were ready, they ſent them acroſs the ſea to Ireland from Briſco* and Lolighet† in Wales; and the conductors were ordered to carry them to a city on the coaſt of Ireland, called Dimelin‡, which had always been ſteadily attached to England, and was an archbiſhoprick: the archbiſhop of which place was with the king.

Soon after Saint John Baptiſt's day, king Richard left London, and took the road for Wales, amuſing himſelf by hunting on the way, to forget the loſs of his queen. Thoſe ordered to attend him began their journey, ſuch as his two uncles of York and Gloceſter, with grand array, as did the other lords: the earl of Kent, half broher to the king, ſir Thomas Holland, his ſon the earl of Rutland, ſon to the duke of York, the earl marſhal, the earls of Saliſbury and Arundel, ſir William Arundel, the earl of Northumberland, ſir Thomas Percy his brother, high ſteward of England, the earls of Devonſhire and Nottingham, with numbers of knights and ſquires.

A conſiderable body remained at home to guard the borders of Scotland; for the Scots are

---

* Briſco. Q. Briſtol.

† Lolighet. Q. Holyhead.

‡ Dimelen. Q. Dublin.

a wicked

a wicked race, and pay not any regard to truces or reſpites, but as it ſuits their own convenience.

At the time the king of England undertook this expedition, he had not the company of his other half brother, ſir John Holland earl of Huntington, for he was on a pilgrimage to Jeruſalem and Saint Catherine of Mount Sinai, and was to return through Hungary. Having heard at Paris, as he paſſed through France, where he had been handſomely treated by the king and his court, in reſpect to the king of England, that the king of Hungary and Amurat* were to have a battle, he declared he would not fail being preſent.

The duke of Lancaſter and his array arrived at Plymouth, where tranſports waited to carry them acroſs the ſea. When his men and purveyances were all on board, they weighed anchor, and ſteered with a favourable wind for Bordeaux.

We will return to the king of England, who had with him full four thouſand men at arms and thirty thouſand archers. They were ſhipped at three different places, Briſtol, Holyhead and Herford†, and paſſed over daily; but it was a month before the whole armament and their horſes landed in Ireland.

On the other hand, there was in Ireland a valiant Engliſh knight, called the earl of Ormond,

---

* The perſon thus called was the ſultan Bajazet I. who began his reign 1391.

† From what follows, I ſuppoſe this muſt mean Haverford-weſt, in Pembrokeſhire, as it is pronounced Harford.

who

who, like his predeceſſors held lands in that country, but they were diſputed, and he had made ſimilar preparations to his anceſtors.

The earl marſhal had the command of the van, conſiſting of fifteen hundred lances and two thouſand archers, who prudently and valiantly conducted themſelves. King Richard and his uncles embarked at Haverford in Wales, many at Holyhead, and others at Briſtol, and the whole landed without any loſs. As they diſembarked, by orders from the conſtable and marſhals, they quartered themſelves on the country, occupying a large uninhabited tract, of about thirty Engliſh miles, beſide the city of Dublin. The army lodged themſelves prudently for fear of the Iriſh: had they done otherwiſe, they would have ſuffered for it. The king, his uncles and prelates, were quartered in Dublin and near it; and I was told that, during the whole campaign, they were well ſupplied with all ſorts of proviſion; for the Engliſh are expert in war, and know well how to forage and take proper care of themſelves and horſes. I will relate the hiſtory of this campaign of king Richard, and what befel him, according to the information I received.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

SIR JOHN FROISSART ARRIVES IN ENGLAND, AND IS PRESENTED TO KING RICHARD BY THE DUKE OF YORK, UNCLE TO THE KING.

IN truth, I ſir John Froiſſart, treaſurer and canon of Chimay, in the county of Hainault and dioceſe of Liege, had, during my ſtay at Abbeville, a great deſire to go and ſee the kingdom of England: more eſpecially ſince a truce had been concluded, for four years, on ſea and land, between France, England and their allies. Several reaſons urged me to make this journey, but principally becauſe in my youth I had been educated at the court of king Edward, of happy memory, and that good lady, Philippa, his queen, with their children, and others of the barons of thoſe times, and was treated by them with all honour, courteſy and liberality.

I was anxious, therefore, to viſit that country, for it ran in my imagination that if I once again ſaw it, I ſhould live the longer; for twenty-ſeven years paſt I had intentions of going thither, and if I ſhould not meet with the lords whom I had left there, I ſhould at leaſt ſee their heirs, who would likewiſe be of great ſervice to me in the verification of the many hiſtories I have related of them.

I men-

I mentioned my purpoſe to my very dear patrons, the lord duke Albert of Bavaria, count of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, and lord of Frizeland; to the lord William his ſon, ſtiled count d'Oſtrevant; to my dear and much honoured lady Joan, ducheſs of Brabant and Luxembourg; and to my very much reſpected lord Enguerrand lord of Coucy; as well as to that gallant knight the lord de Gomegines. We had both, during our youth, arrived together at the Engliſh court, where I ſaw alſo the lord de Coucy, and all the nobles of France, who were hoſtages for the redemption of king John of France, which has been before related in this hiſtory.

The three lords above mentioned, as well as the lord de Gomegines, and madame de Brabant, on my telling them my intentions, encouraged me to perſevere, and they all gave me letters of introduction to the king and his uncles, with the reſerve of the lord de Coucy, who, from being now ſo much attached to France, could only write to his daughter, the ducheſs of Ireland.

I had taken care to form a collection of all the poetry on love and morality that I had compoſed during the laſt twenty-four years, which I had cauſed to be fairly written and illuminated. I was alſo incited to go to England and ſee king Richard, ſon to the noble and valiant prince of Wales and Aquitaine, whom I had not ſeen ſince the time of his chriſtening in the cathedral church of Bordeaux. I was then preſent, and had intentions of accompanying the prince of Wales in his expedi-

tion

1 to Spain; but, when we came to the city of x, the prince ſent me back to the queen his ther in England. I was deſirous, therefore, to my reſpects to the king of England and his les, and had provided myſelf with my book of ſy finely ornamented, bound in velvet, and orated with ſilver gilt claſps and ſtuds, as a ſent for the king. Having this intention, I red no pains; and the coſt and labour ſeem ling to people, whenever they undertake any g willingly.

Having provided myſelf with horſes, I croſſed n Calais to Dover on the 12th day of July; found no one there whom I had been ac- inted with in my former journies: the inns e all kept by new people, and the children of former acquaintance were become men and wo- n. I ſtaid half a day and night to refreſh myſelf horſes; and on Wedneſday, by nine o'clock, ved at Canterbury to viſit the ſhrine of Saint omas and the tomb of the late prince of les, who had been buried there with great np.

heard high maſs, made my offering at the ne, and returned to my inn to dinner, when I rd the king was to come the following day in grimage to St. Thomas of Becket. He was ly returned from Ireland, where he had re- ined for nine months, or thereabouts, and was tious to pay his devotions in this church, on ac- nt of the holy body of the Saint, and becauſe father was there buried. I thought, there-

fore,

fore, it would be well to wait his arrival, which I did; and on the morrow, the king came in great ſtate, accompanied by lords and ladies, with whom I mixed; but they were all new faces to me, for I did not remember one of them.

Times and perſons had greatly changed ſince I was laſt in England, eight and twenty years paſt. The king had not either of his uncles with him: the duke of Lancaſter was in Aquitaine, and the dukes of York and Gloceſter in other parts. I was at firſt quite aſtoniſhed, and ſhould have been comforted could I have ſeen an ancient knight who had been of the bed-chamber to king Edward, and was in the ſame capacity to the preſent king, as well as of his privy council, and could I have made myſelf known to him. The name of this knight was ſir Richard Sturry. I aſked if he were alive: they ſaid he was, but not then preſent, as he was at his reſidence in London.

I then determined to addreſs myſelf to ſir Thomas Percy, high ſteward of England. I found him gracious and of agreeable manners, and he offered to preſent me and my letters to the king. I was rejoiced at this promiſe; for it is neceſſary to have friends to introduce one to ſo great a prince as the king of England. He went to the king's apartments to ſee if it were a proper time, but found the king had retired to repoſe: he therefore bade me return to my inn. When I though the king might be riſen, I went again to the palace of the archbiſhop, where he lodged; but ſ Thomas Percy and his people were preparing

ſet out for Oſpringe, whence he had come that morning. I aſked ſir Thomas's advice how to act: 'For the preſent,' he ſaid, 'do not make further attempts to announce your arrival, but follow the king; and I will take care, when he comes to his palace in this country, which he will do in two days, that you ſhall be well lodged as long as the court tarries there.'

The king was going to a beautiful palace in the county of Kent, called Leeds caſtle, and I followed ſir Thomas Percy's advice by taking the road to Oſpringe. I lodged at an inn where I found a gallant knight of the king's chamber, but he had that morning ſtaid behind on account of a ſlight pain in his head that had ſeized him the preceding night. This knight, whoſe name was ſir William de Liſle, ſeeing I was a foreigner and a Frenchman (for all who ſpeak the language of Oil are by the Engliſh conſidered as Frenchmen, whatever country they may come from), made acquaintance with me, and I with him, for the Engliſh are courteous to ſtrangers.

He aſked my ſituation and buſineſs in England, which I related to him at length, as well as what ſir Thomas Percy had adviſed me to do. He replied, that I could not have had better advice, for that the king would on Friday be at Leeds caſtle, and would find there his uncle the duke of York. I was well pleaſed to hear this, for I had letters to the duke, and, when young, was known to him while in the houſehold of the late king and queen.

I courted the acquaintance of ſir William de Liſle, as a means of gaining greater intimacy with the king's houſehold. On the Friday, we rode out together, and on the road I aſked if he had accompanied the king on his expedition to Ireland. He ſaid he had. I then aſked if there were any foundation in truth for what was ſaid of Saint Patrick's hole*. He replied there was; and that he and

* 'Nothing has rendered this county (Donegal) ſo famous as the cave diſcovered by the patron ſaint of Ireland, or his nameſake, abbot of Nevers, about four hundred years after, in which the holy monk obtained a conſtant exhibition of the torments of the wicked, for the edification of the Iriſh. But that it could not be Saint Patrick who firſt invented it, is plain from his ſilence about it in his book 'de tribus habitaculis,' heaven, earth and hell. Henry or Hugh, monk of Saltrey, in Huntingdonſhire, was the firſt who wrote about it, and what one Owen or Tyndal, a ſoldier, had ſeen there. It was about ſixteen feet and a half long, by two feet one inch wide, built of free ſtone, covered with broad flags, and green turf laid over them, and was ſo low and narrow, that a tall man could hardly ſit, much leſs ſtand in it. In the ſide was a window juſt wide enough to admit a faint ray of light: in the floor a cavity capable of containing a man at his length; and, under a large ſtone at the end of the pavement, a deep pit, which had opened at the prayers of the ſaint. The bottom of the cave was originally much below the ſurface of the ground. It ſtood on the eaſt ſide of the church, in the church-yard, encompaſſed with a wall, and ſurrounded by circles or cells, called *the beds*, ſcarcely three feet high, denominated from ſeveral ſaints. The penitents, who viſited this iſland, after faſting on bread and water for nine days, and making proceſſions round theſe holy ſtations thrice a-day barefoot, for the firſt ſeven days, and ſix times on the eighth, waſhing their weary limbs each night in the adjoining lake, on the ninth enter the cave

and another knight, during the king's ſtay at Dublin, had been there. They entered it at ſun-ſet, remained there the whole night, and came out at ſun-riſe the next morning. I requeſted he would tell me whether he ſaw all the marvellous things which are ſaid to be ſeen there. He made me the following anſwer: 'When I and my companion had paſſed the entrance of the cave,

---

cave. Here they obſerve a twenty-four hours faſt, taſting only a little water, and, upon quitting it, bathe in the lake, and ſo conclude the ſolemnity. The original preparatory faſt, as we learn from Matthew Paris, was fifteen days, and as long after quitting the cave, out of which all who entered did not return.

'Leave being firſt obtained of the biſhop of the dioceſe, the prior repreſented to the penitents all the horror and difficulty of the undertaking, ſuggeſting to them at the ſame time an eaſier penance. If they perſevered in their reſolution, they were conducted to the door with a proceſſion from the convent, and, after twenty-four hours confinement, let out next morning with the like ceremony. In this receſs, enlightened only by a kind of twilight, which diſcovered a field and hall, Owen was firſt viſited by fifteen perſons clothed in white, like religious newly ſhorn, who encouraged him againſt the horrid ſcenes that were next to preſent themſelves to his view. They were ſucceeded by troops of demons, who began with laying him on a burning pile, which he ſoon extinguiſhed, by pronouncing the name of Chriſt. They then dragged him through the ſeveral ſcenes of torment, where the wicked ſuffered all the variety of tortures of ancient Tartarus; and, ſtanding proof againſt all theſe horrors, he was favoured with a full view and deſcription of paradiſe, by two venerable prelates, who refuſed to let him ſtay there. He met with the ſame demons and monks as he went out of the cave, after which he viſited the holy ſepulchre, and, at his return, taking upon him the habit, aſſiſted in founding Beſmagovciſth abbey.—*Gough's Addition to Camden*, p. 641, vol. 3.'

called the Purgatory of Saint Patrick, we deſcended three or four ſteps, (for you go down into it like a cellar) but found our heads ſo much affected by the heat, we ſeated ourſelves on the ſteps, which are of ſtone, and ſuch a drowſineſs came on, that we ſlept there the whole night.'

I aſked, if, when aſleep, they knew where they were, and what viſions they had. He ſaid, they had many very ſtrange dreams, and they ſeemed, as they imagined to ſee more than they would have done if they had been in their beds. This they both were aſſured of. 'When morning came, and we were awake, the door of the cave was opened, for ſo we had ordered it, and we came out, but inſtantly loſt all recollection of every thing we had ſeen, and looked on the whole as a phantom.'

I did not puſh the converſation further, although I ſhould have much liked to have heard what he would ſay of Ireland; but other knights overtook us, and converſed with him; and thus we rode to Leeds caſtle, where the king and his court arrived ſhortly after. The duke of York was already there; and I made myſelf known to him, by preſenting him letters from his couſins, the count of Hainault and the count d'Oſtrevant. The duke recollected me, and made me a hearty welcome, ſaying,—'Sir John, keep with us and our people; for we will ſhew you every courteſy and attention: we are bounden ſo to do, from remembrance of paſt times, and affection to the memory of our lady-mother, to whom you were attached. We have not forgotten theſe times.' I warmly thanked him,

him, as was juſt, for his kind ſpeech, and was well noticed by him, ſir Thomas Percy and ſir William de Liſle, who carried me to the king's chamber, where I was introduced to him by his uncle, the duke of York.

The king received me graciouſly and kindly: he took all the letters I preſented to him, and, having read them attentively, ſaid I was welcome, and that ſince I had belonged to the houſehold of the late king and queen, his grandfather and grandmother, I muſt conſider myſelf ſtill as of the royal houſehold of England. This day I did not offer him the book I had brought; for ſir Thomas Percy told me it was not a fit opportunity, as he was much occupied with ſerious buſineſs.

The council was deeply engaged on two ſubjects; firſt, in reſpect to the negotiation with France, to treat of a marriage between the king and the lady Iſabella, eldeſt daughter to the king of France, who at that time was about eight years old. The ambaſſadors appointed to make this propoſal to France, were the earl of Rutland, couſin-german to the king, the earl marſhal, the archbiſhop of Dublin, the biſhop of Lye, the lord Clifford, lord Beaumont, lord Hugh Spencer, and ſeveral others*.

* See the Fœdera for full particulars. The ambaſſadors were the archbiſhop of Dublin, the biſhop of Saint David's, the earl of Rutland, the earl marſhal and ſir William Scrope. They were to propoſe alſo a marriage between the earl of Rutland and the youngeſt daughter of the king of France.

The inſtructions to theſe ambaſſadors are dated 'Leeds caſtle, 8th day of July 1395.'

Secondly, the lord de la Barde, the lord de la Taride, the lord de Pinterne, the lord de Châteauneuf, the lords de Leveſque and de Copane, the chief magiſtrates of Bordeaux, Bayonne and Dax, were come to England, and greatly perſecuted the king, ſince his return from Ireland, for an anſwer to their petitions and remonſtrances, on the gift the king had made his uncle, the duke of Lancaſter, of all Aquitaine, with its lordſhips, baronies and dependances, which had appertained to the king and crown of England. The above-mentioned lords, and principal cities and towns in Aquitaine, maintained that ſuch a gift could not be made, and that it was null; for that the whole of Aquitaine was a fief depending ſolely on the crown of England, and that they would never conſent thus to be disjoined from it. They had made ſeveral reaſonable propoſitions for an accommodation, which I will relate in proper time and place.

In order that theſe matters might be more fully conſidered, and indeed they required it, the king had ſummoned the principal barons and prelates of the realm to meet him on Magdalen-day, at his palace of Eltham, ſeven miles from London, and the ſame diſtance from Dartford. On the fourth day after the king's arrival, when I learnt that he, his council and the duke of York were about to quit Leeds caſtle and go to Rocheſter, in their way to Eltham, I ſet out in their company,

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

THE INFORMATION FROISSART GAINS IN ENGLAND, TOUCHING THE OPPOSITION OF THE INHABITANTS OF AQUITAINE TO THE GIFT THE KING OF ENGLAND HAD MADE OF IT TO HIS UNCLE THE DUKE OF LANCASTER.—THE COMMISSIONERS SENT TO REMONSTRATE ON THE MATTER WITH THE KING CANNOT OBTAIN A DECISIVE ANSWER RELATIVE THERETO.

ON the road to Rocheſter, I aſked ſir William de Liſle and ſir John de Grailly, governor of Bouteville, the cauſe of the king's journey to London, and why the parliament was to be aſſembled at Eltham. They both anſwered me ſatisfactorily; but ſir John Grailly particularly informed me why the lords of Gaſcony, and the deputies from the chief towns were come to England. He was ſo well acquainted with them, being as it were from the ſame country and fellow-ſubjects to England, that they hid nothing from him. He ſaid, 'that when the duke of Lancaſter came laſt to Aquitaine, he was provided with deeds ſealed with the great ſeal of England, which had been regularly agreed to in parliament and ſigned by the dukes of York and Gloceſter to whom Aquitain might poſſibly revert, by ſucceſſion, to king Richard, of England, who had no children,

and theſe two dukes were brothers german, by father and mother, to the duke of Lancaſter.

'The duke of Lancaſter ſent part of his council to Bordeaux, to inform the mayor and magiſtrates of his coming and the cauſe of it. They were greatly ſurpriſed on hearing it; but, notwithſtanding, they well feaſted the commiſſioners he had ſent, in honour to the king, to whom they owed ſervice and obedience. They deſired time to conſider of their anſwer, which being granted, they replied, that the duke of Lancaſter, as ſon to king Edward of happy memory, who had been their lord, was welcome, but not in any other capacity, as they had not as yet ſufficiently weighed the matter to determine on receiving him as their lord; for their ſovereign, king Richard, to whom they had ſworn fealty, had not acquitted them of their obedience. The duke's commiſſioners replied, that as to this, the duke would take upon himſelf to ſatisfy them they ſhould never have any trouble from his nephew the king of England.

When thoſe of Bordeaux ſaw themſelves thus hardly preſſed, they made another excuſe by ſaying,—'Gentlemen, the grant we perceive includes not only us but the cities of Bayonne and Dax, and the prelates and barons of Gaſcony who are under the obedience of the king of England. Go to them, and as they ſhall regulate we will do the ſame.' The commiſſioners, not being able to get any other anſwer, left Bordeaux, and returned to the duke of Lancaſter at Libourne.

'When

'When the duke heard the above anſwer, he became very thoughtful, and foreſaw that the buſineſs he was come upon would not be ſo ſoon ſettled as he had at firſt imagined, or had been made to underſtand. He ſent, however, his commiſſioners to Bayonne, who were received by the Bayonnois in juſt the ſame manner as they had been received at Bordeaux, nor could they obtain a different anſwer.

'At length, the prelates, barons and deputies from all the towns of Gaſcony under the obedience of England, aſſembled, and, having debated the juſtice of the king of England's grant to the duke of Lancaſter, came to the following concluſion. They were very willing to receive in their caſtles, cities and towns, the duke of Lancaſter, as ſon to the noble king Edward of happy memory, and as uncle to king Richard of England; but on condition he would ſolemnly ſwear, that himſelf and people would peaceably demean themſelves during their ſtay, and that they would not take any thing by force, but pay ready money for whatever they might want; nor ſhould he, the duke of Lancaſter, extend the powers of the crown to oppreſs any one, nor do ſo by other means.

'The duke replied, that he was not come to hurt or oppreſs the people, but, on the contrary, to guard and defend them as his own inheritance, and entreated that the will of the king of England ſhould be complied with. But the country, with one voice, declared they would not be disjoined from the crown of England, and that it was not

in

in the power of the king of England thus to turn them over to another.

'This matter was diſputed for a long time between the duke of Lancaſter and the Gaſcons; and, when he ſaw he could not prevail on them to receive him as their lord, he requeſted they would ſend ſufficiently-authoriſed perſons to the king of England, as he would do on his part, and whatever the parliament of England ſhould determine, whether in his favour or not, he would abide by.

'The Gaſcons, thinking this a very reaſonable propoſal from the duke, agreed to it; and he then came with his attendants, to reſide among them, at his former lodgings in the abbey of Saint Andrew. The prelates and barons of Gaſcony, as well as the cities of Bayonne and Dax, ſelected proper commiſſioners to ſend to England.

'When the king of France, his uncles and miniſters, heard for certain that the duke of Lancaſter had been peaceably received in Bordeaux, and that he had there fixed his reſidence, they knew not what to think of it, nor whether he would adhere to the truces that had been made between France and England. This gave them ſo much uneaſineſs, that they reſolved to ſend ambaſſadors to the duke of Lancaſter to learn his intentions. The lord Boucicaut, marſhal of France, ſir John de Châteaumorant and ſir John Barrois des Barres, were choſen for this purpoſe, and they were to have under their command one thouſand well appointed men at arms. They left Paris, and continued their march to Agen, where they quartered

tered themſelves as well as in the ſurrounding country: they then ſent heralds and meſſengers to the duke of Lancaſter, in the city of Bordeaux, to notify their wiſhes to ſpeak with him.

'The duke made the meſſengers good cheer, heard what they had to ſay, and wrote back to their lords, that ſince they were deſirous to ſpeak with him, he was as anxious to meet them; and, in order to give them leſs trouble, would go to Bergerac, where they would confer together. The meſſengers, on their return to Agen, gave their lords the letter from the duke of Lancaſter, which ſatisfied them as to their ſafety, and they made preparations accordingly. As ſoon as they heard of the duke's arrival at Bergerac, they left the city of Agen, and marched thither, where they found the gates open to receive them. The lords entered the town, and went to the hôtels which had been prepared for them; but their men lodged themſelves in the ſuburbs and adjacent villages. The three lords waited on the duke of Lancaſter, who kindly received them, as he knew well how to do; and, in reply to what they urged, he ſaid, 'that he wiſhed to be always a good neighbour, and on friendly terms with the king and realm of France, and to adhere to every article of the truces that had been lately made between France, England and their allies. He had been very active in forming theſe truces, and of courſe would be unwilling any way to infringe them; and of this they might be perfectly aſſured.'

'The

'The anſwer of the duke was highly gratifying to the French lords, who remained with him on the moſt friendly terms. He entertained them grandly at dinner and ſupper in the caſtle of Bergerac, after which they ſeparated in a very amicable manner. The duke returned to Bordeaux, and the French lords towards Paris; but in their way they met the duke of Berry in Poitiers, to whom they related all they had done, and the duke of Lancaſter's anſwer. The duke of Berry thought it ſatisfactory and reaſonable, as did the king of France and the duke of Burgundy, when the three lords reported it to them, on their arrival at Paris. Things remained on this aſſurance quiet. What after happened I have told you,' added ſir John de Grailly; 'for the duke of Lancaſter ſent hither ſome of the principal of his council, ſuch as ſir William de la Perriere, ſir Peter Cliquetot, and two doctors of laws, maſter John Huche and maſter John Richards de Lincoſtre, to plead his cauſe before the king, his uncles and council*. It is for this reaſon the king is now going to Eltham; for as Thurſday next is Magladen-day, the parliament will meet there. What deciſion they will come to, I cannot ſay, but this I know, that the duke of Glocester will be preſent, and be violent in his ſupport of the duke of Lancaſter's claims; for I have heard, from ſome of the Engliſh who

* Hollingſhead calls them ſir William Perreer,—ſir Peter Clifton,—maſter John Huich,—and maſter John Richards, a canon of Leiceſter.

ought

ought to know, that he would cheerfully ſee his brother firmly eſtabliſhed in Guyenne, and never to return to England, for he finds him his ſuperior, and for this reaſon is deſirous he ſhould gain the duchy of Aquitaine. The duke of Gloceſter has a good head, but is proud, and wonderfully overbearing in his manners. Let him ſay or act as he pleaſes, he is always popular with the commonalty, for they are mutually attached to each other. He was the cauſe of the execution of that valiant knight ſir Simon Burley. He it was, likewiſe, who cauſed the baniſhment of the duke of Ireland, the archbiſhop of York and other knights of the king's council, who were either put to death on very ſlight grounds, or forced into foreign countries, during the time the duke of Lancaſter, who is more feared than loved in this country, was in Caſtille.

'Let us for the preſent,' ſaid ſir John de Grailly, 'quit this matter, and ſpeak of the ſecond object that occupies the council. It ſeems to me, from what I have ſeen and heard, that the king of England wiſhes to marry again, and has had reſearches made every where, but in vain, for a ſuitable lady. If the duke of Burgundy or count of Hainault had daughters of a proper age, he would not be averſe to either; but they have none that are not already betrothed. He has been told that they king of Navarre has ſiſters and daughters, but he will not hear of them. The duke of Gloceſter has likewiſe a grown up girl and marriageable, and he would be well pleaſed if his nephew wolud chooſe her; but

but the king ſays, ſhe is too nearly related, being his couſin-german. King Richard's thoughts are ſo bent on the eldeſt daughter of the king of France, he will not hear of any other: it cauſes great wonder in this country that he ſhould be ſo eager to marry the daughter of his adverſary, and he is not the better beloved for it. This he ſeems indifferent to, and plainly ſhews that henceforward he will prefer war with any country rather than with France. It is known from experience how axious he was that a ſtable peace ſhould be eſtabliſhed between the two countries; for he ſaid the wars had laſted too long between him and his predeceſſors with France, and that too many valiant men had been ſlain on both ſides, to the great weakening of the defenders of the Chriſtian faith.

'To put this idea out of the king's mind, for it is no way agreeable to the people of England that he ſhould connect himſelf by marriage with France, they have told him the lady was by far too young, and that for five or ſix years to come ſhe would not be of a proper age for a wife. He replied by ſaying, that every day ſhe would increaſe in age. In addition to this, he gave pleaſantly his reaſons for his preferring her, that ſince ſhe was ſo young, he ſhould educate her, and bring her up to his own mind, and to the manners of the Engliſh, and that for himſelf he was young enough to wait until ſhe ſhould be of proper age for his wife. Nothing can make him change this reſolution, and before you leave this country, you may perhaps witneſs many ſtrange things.

It

It is for this and the other buſineſs I mentioned that he is journeying towards London.'

With ſuch converſation did ſir John de Grailly entertain me while travelling between Rocheſter and Dartford. He was the baſtard-ſon of that gallant knight the captal de Buch. I eagerly liſtened to all he ſaid, and treaſured his words in my memory; for I rode chiefly in his company, and with ſir William de Liſle, the whole way from Leeds caſtle to Eltham.

The king arrived at Eltham on a Tueſday. On the Wedneſday, the lords came from all parts. There were the duke of Gloceſter, the earls of Derby, Arundel, Northumberland, Kent, Rutland, the earl marſhal, the archbiſhops of Canterbury and of York, the biſhops of London and of Wincheſter: in ſhort, all who had been ſummoned arrived at Eltham on the Thurſday, by eight o'clock in the morning.

The parliament was holden in the king's apartment, in the preſence of the king, his uncles and council. The knights from Gaſcony and the deputies from the cities and towns, as well as thoſe ſent by the duke of Lancaſter, were preſent.

I cannot ſay what paſſed at this parliament, for I was not admitted, nor were any but the members of it. It ſat for upwards of four hours. When it was over, I renewed my acquaintance after dinner with an ancient knight whom in my youth I well knew, when he was of the chamber of king Edward. He was now one of the principal

adviſers

advisers of king Richard, and deserving of it: his name was sir Richard Seury*. He immediately recollected me, though it was twenty-four years since we had seen each other; the last time was at Colleberget, at Brussels, in the hôtel of duke Wenceslaus and the duchess Jane of Brabant.

Sir Richard Sturry seemed very glad to see me, and made me a hearty welcome. He asked many questions, which I answered as fully and as well as I could. While we were walking near the king's apartment at Eltham, I inquired if he could inform me what had been the determination of the parliament: having mused awhile, he said he would tell me, for it was not worth while to conceal what must shortly be made public.

'You know,' continued the knight, 'or have heard, that the duke of Lancaster left England for Aquitaine, on receiving the magnificent gift the king our lord made him. The king loves all who pretend friendship for him, but particularly the duke of Lancaster; and out of gratitude, which he strongly feels, for the great services the duke has done the crown, as well on this as on the other side of the sea, the king has given him and to his

* This knight is called sir Richard Seury,—Scury,—Sevry, but I imagine it must be sir Richard Sturry, who was one of king Richard's favourites, and has been mentioned during the reign of Edward III.

† Colleberge. I do not understand this passage, for the town of Colberg is in the duchy of Pomerania. It never could have been there they met. There is a full stop at the end of Colleberg in the printed and MS. copies: the MSS. say fourteen years instead of twenty-four.

heirs

heirs for ever the whole of the duchy of Aquitaine, with all its dependancies, excepting the homage, which is the ſole thing he has reſerved for the crown of England in times to come. This gift has gone through every legal form, with the approbation and conſent of his other uncles and the Engliſh parliament. The king has ſpecially commanded all his ſubjects within the boundaries of Aquitaine, to obey punctually his well-beloved uncle the duke of Lancaſter as their ſovereign lord, and to pay him homage and ſervice, in the uſual manner, as they have done to their lords in former times. Should any prove rebellious to theſe orders, the king gives the duke of Lancaſter full powers to puniſh ſuch within three days after their diſobedience, without any expectation of ſupport from him.

'It has happened, however, that notwithſtanding theſe ſtrict orders of the king, the barons, knights, gentlemen, cities and towns of Gaſcony, under the obedience of England, have united together in oppoſition to the duke of Lancaſter, and refuſe to obey him, declaring and maintaining that the gift the king made his uncle of Lancaſter is null and void. The duke, who is deſirous of acting in this buſineſs by fair means, has liſtened to their reaſonings on the ſubject, and adviſed, to prevent further miſchief, that they ſhould ſend hither properly-inſtructed perſons to lay their complaints before the king, and declare their reaſons for having oppoſed his orders.

'They have certainly this day very ably explained the cauſe of refuſing their obedience to the duke of Lancaſter, and have given the king and his council enough to think upon. They will probably ſucceed in their miſſion, and I will tell you my reaſons for ſo thinking; but you will keep them ſecret, until the matter ſhall become more public.' I replied, that he might depend on my doing it. He then continued; 'I believe it was the official of Bordeaux, who, for his learning was their ſpokeſman: he began by ſhewing their procurations from the different towns, that greater faith might be given to what he ſhould ſay. He then declared, that the cities of Bordeaux, Bayonne, Dax, and all the lordſhips dependant on them, or within their limits and juriſdictions, are of ſuch noble condition, that no king of England, by any act of his, can disjoin them from the domain of the crown of England, nor alienate or diſpoſe of them to any child, uncle or brother he may have, nor by any way of marriage-ſettlement nor otherwiſe. They above-named towns have received, from different kings of England, certain privileges, which their ſucceſſors have ſworn to maintain without any infringement; and the moment a king of England comes into poſſeſſion of the crown of England and its dependancies, he ſwears, on the miſſal in his hand, to preſerve inviolate all their privileges, which you, dear ſire, have alſo done, as theſe papers will prove. He then produced charters, fairly engroſſed and ſealed with the great ſeal of England, which king

Richard,

Richard, who was then preſent, had given them, and read the whole clauſe by clauſe.

'The contents of the charters were well underſtood, for they were in Latin and French; and at the end he named ſeveral great barons and prelates, to the number of eleven, who had been nominated as ſureties.

'When the papers were read, each lord looked at his neighbour and to the king, but not one ſaid a word in reply. The official, having finiſhed reading his deeds, thus ſpoke, addreſſing himſelf to the king: 'Moſt beloved and renowned ſovereign, and you, my dear lords, all what you have juſt heard, am I charged by the deputies of the principal towns and inhabitants of Gaſcony to lay before you, and to maintain their dependance ſolely on the crown of England, as the charters that have been ſhewn plainly declare. Should the country be inclined to receive the duke of Lancaſter for its lord, and be freed from the ſervice and homage it owes you, the loſs would be very great to England; for if, at this moment, the duke is attached to the king, and attentive to preſerve the privileges of the crown of England, that love and affection will, in courſe of time, be much weakened by his ſucceſſive heirs, and by intermarriages that may take place: it is neceſſary that marriages ſhould be concluded between great princes, for the more effectually preſerving the love of their ſubjects. Now it may happen, in times to come, that the heirs of the duke of Lancaſter ſhall unite themſelves by marriage with the

daughters of the kings of France, the dukes of Berry, Brittany, the counts of Foix or of Armagnac, the kings of Navarre, the dukes of Anjou or of Maine, and form alliances with their connections on the other ſide of the ſea, claiming the whole ſovereignty of Guyenne, and ruining the country, by putting it in oppoſition to England.

The king of England would probably, in ſuch a caſe, have great difficulty in recovering the rights due to the crown. Condeſcend, therefore, moſt noble king, and you, my dear lords, to conſider well all the reaſons I have laid before you; for the whole country is unanimous and determined to remain under the obedience of our much redoubted lord and king, and in dependance on the crown of England.' The official here ended his ſpeech; and the prelates and lords, looking to each other, approached the king, conducted by his two uncles and the earls of Derby and Arundel.

'It was then ſuggeſted to thoſe who had come from Aquitaine, to leave the chamber until called for, which they did, with the two knights who had been ſent by the duke of Lancaſter. This being done, the king demanded from the prelates and barons what anſwer ſhould be made. The prelates referred the anſwer to the two uncles of the king, becauſe the matter more nearly affected them. At firſt, they excuſed themſelves, ſaying, it was a public concern, and ſhould be deliberated on in common, and not treated as any matter of favour. The

buſineſs

buſineſs thus remained for ſome time; but the duke of Gloceſter being deſired to give his opinion, he ſaid, it would be a ſtrong meaſure to take from the king a gift that he had made with the unanimous conſent of his council, and that had been inveſted with every legal form, becauſe his ſubjects were rebellious; that the king was not lord of his inheritance if he could not diſpoſe of it as he pleaſed. Some commented on this ſpeech, while others had the courage to ſay the anſwer was not reaſonable, though they dared not contradict it; for the duke of Gloceſter was much feared.

'The earl of Derby, ſon of the duke of Lancaſter, added, 'Good uncle, you have well ſpoken, and juſtly explained the matter, and I ſupport what you have ſaid.' The council on this began to ſeparate, and to murmur one to another; but they did not call in the envoys from Guyenne, nor thoſe from the duke of Lancaſter.'

Here the old knight ended the converſation; but I learnt from him afterwards, that when the king heard this, he diſſembled his opinion, with the intention of again ſummoning his council after dinner, to know if any meaſures, more to the advantage of the crown, ſhould be adopted, or if any thing further ſhould be done in reſpect to Aquitaine.

The king made the archbiſhop of Canterbury ſpeak on the buſineſs of his marriage, as he had ordered him in the morning, and who ſhould be ſent to France, for he was very earneſt that this matter ſhould be accompliſhed. It had before

been in debate, and was nearly agreed to, and thoſe were named who were to croſs the ſea, although their inſtructions had not been given to them. In this council it was ordered, that the archbiſhop of Dublin, the earl of Rutland, the earl marſhal, the lord Beaumont, ſir Hugh Spencer, ſir Lewis Clifford, to the number of twenty knights and forty ſquires of honour, ſhould wait on the king of France and propoſe a treaty of marriage between the king of England and the lady Iſabella, his daughter, who might then be about eight years old. She had been betrothed before to the duke of Brittany's ſon, as you have ſeen when the meeting took place, and peace was made between the king of France and the duke of Brittany, at Tours. To break this would be difficult, for the king of France and his uncles had put their ſeals to the treaty.

Notwithſtanding this obſtacle, the Engliſh ambaſſadors, having received their inſtructions, left London, and, croſſing the ſea at Dover, arrived in two or three days at Calais. They ſtaid there five days to refreſh themſelves and their horſes, and then departed, taking the road to Amiens, having ſent before the Iriſh herald March, who had brought them paſſports from the king of France on his return to Calais. The lord de Monchourel * was alſo ſent as a guide, and to have all cities and towns opened to them, as well as to provide for what they might want. We will

* Monchourel. In the MSS. Mont-caurel.

leave

leave them for a little, and return to the matters we were before ſpeaking of.

As I have mentioned, the deputies from Gaſcony and from the chief towns in Aquitaine were earneſt in their ſolicitations to the king and council that they might remain attached to the crown of England, according to their ancient rights and privileges, which it had been repeatedly ſworn ſhould be obſerved, in ſpite of every cauſe, obſtacle or condition to the contrary. Three parts of the council, and the unanimous voice of the people of England, were on their ſide; but Thomas of Woodſtock, duke of Gloceſter, youngeſt ſon to the late king Edward, oppoſed them, and plainly ſhewed he wiſhed his brother of Lancaſter to be detained in Aquitaine, for he felt he was too powerful when in England, and too nearly allied to the king. As for his brother of York, he held him cheap, for he interfered little in public affairs, and was without malice or guile, wiſhing only to live in quiet: he had beſide juſt married a young and beautiful wife, daughter to the earl of Kent, with whom he ſpent moſt of his time which was not occupied with other amuſements.

The duke of Gloceſter was cunning and malicious, and continually ſoliciting favours from his nephew king Richard, pleading poverty, though he abounded in wealth; for he was conſtable of England, duke of Gloceſter, earl of Buckingham, Eſſex and Northampton. He had beſide penſions on the king's exchequer, to the amount of four thouſand nobles a-year; and he would not exert

himſelf in any way to ſerve his king or country, if he were not well paid for it. He was violently adverſe to thoſe of Aquitaine in this buſineſs, and did every thing in his power that the duke of Lancaſter might not return to England, for then he would have every thing his own way.

To ſhew that he governed the king and was the greateſt in the council, as ſoon as he had delivered his opinion, and ſaw that many were murmuring at it, and that the prelates and lords were diſcuſſing it in ſmall parties, he quitted the king's chamber, followed by the earl of Derby, and entered the hall at Eltham, where he ordered a table to be ſpread, and they both ſat down to dinner while the others were debating the buſineſs. When the duke of York heard they were at dinner, he joined them. After their dinner, which took no long time, the duke of Gloceſter, diſſembling his thoughts, took leave of the king as he was ſeated at table, mounted his horſe, and returned to London. The earl of Derby remained that and the enſuing day with the king and the lords, but thoſe from Aquitaine could not procure any anſwer to their petitions.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

FROISSART PRESENTS HIS BOOK OF LOVE POEMS TO KING RICHARD OF ENGLAND.—HE RELATES WHAT HE HAD HEARD OF THE LAST EXPEDITION OF THE ENGLISH TO IRELAND.

I HAVE taken much pleaſure in detailing every thing relative to the diſpute with Gaſcony and Aquitaine, that the truth of my hiſtory may be apparent; and becauſe I, the author of it, could not be preſent in theſe councils, that ancient and valiant knight ſir Richard Sturry told me every thing, word for word, as I have tranſcribed. On the Sunday, the whole council were gone to London, excepting the duke of York, who remained with the king, and ſir Richard Sturry: theſe two, in conjunction with ſir Thomas Percy, mentioned me again to the king, who deſired to ſee the book I had brought for him. I preſented it to him in his chamber, for I had it with me, and laid it on his bed. He opened and looked into it with much pleaſure. He ought to have been pleaſed, for it was handſomely written and illuminated, and bound in crimſon-velvet, with ten ſilver gilt ſtuds, and roſes of the ſame in the middle, with two large claſps of ſilver gilt, richly worked with roſes in the center.

The king aſked me what the book treated of: I replied, 'Of love!' He was pleaſed with the anſwer,

ſwer, and dipped into ſeveral places, reading parts aloud, for he read and ſpoke French perfectly well, and then gave it to one of his knights, called ſir Richard Credon, to carry to his oratory, and made me many acknowledgments for it.

It happened this ſame Sunday, after the king had received my book ſo handſomely, an Engliſh ſquire, being in the king's chamber, called Henry Caſtide*, a man of prudence and character, and who ſpoke French well, made acquaintance with me, becauſe he ſaw the king and lords give me ſo hearty a reception, and had likewiſe noticed the book I had preſented to the king: he alſo imagined, from his firſt converſation, that I was an hiſtorian; indeed, he had been told ſo by ſir Richard Sturry. He thus addreſſed me: 'Sir John, have you as yet found any one to give you an account of the late expedition to Ireland, and how four kings of that country ſubmitted themſelves to the obedience of the king?' I replied, that I had not. 'I will tell it you then,' ſaid the ſquire, who might be afout fifty years old, 'in order that, when you are returned home, you may at your leiſure inſert it in your hiſtory, to be had in perpetual remembrance.' I was delighted to hear this, and offered him my warmeſt thanks.

Henry Caſtide thus began: 'It is not in the memory of man that any king of England ever led ſo large an armament of men at arms and archers

* Caſtide. The MSS. Criſteed. Stowe, Henry Criſtall. Sauvage afterwards calls him Criſtelle.

to

to make war on the Iriſh, as the preſent king. He remained upwards of nine months in Ireland, at great expenſe, which, however, was cheerfully defrayed by his kingdom; for the principal cities and towns of England thought it was well laid out, when they ſaw their king return home with honour. Only gentlemen and archers had been employed on this expedition; and there were with the king four thouſand knights and ſquires and thirty thouſand archers, all regularly paid every week, and ſo well they were ſatisfied.

'To tell you the truth, Ireland is one of the worſt countries to make war in, or to conquer; for there are ſuch impenetrable and extenſive foreſts, lakes and bogs, there is no knowing how to paſs them, and carry on war advantageouſly: it is ſo thinly inhabited, that, whenever the Iriſh pleaſe, they deſert the towns, and take refuge in theſe foreſts, and live in huts made of boughs, like wild beaſts; and whenever they perceive any parties advancing with hoſtile diſpoſitions, and about to enter their country, they fly to ſuch narrow paſſes, it is impoſſible to follow them. When they find a favourable opportunity to attack their enemies to advantage, which frequently happens, from their knowledge of the country, they fail not to ſeize it; and no man at arms, be he ever ſo well mounted, can overtake them, ſo light are they on foot. Sometimes they leap from the ground behind a horſeman, and embrace the rider (for they are very ſtrong

ſtrong in their arms) ſo tightly, than he can no way get rid of them.

'The Iriſh have pointed knives, with broad blades, ſharp on both ſides like a dart-head, with which they kill their enemies; but they never conſider them as dead until they have cut their throats like ſheep, opened their bellies and taken out their hearts, which they carry off with them, and ſome ſay, who are well acquainted with their manners, that they devour them as delicious morſels. They never accept of ranſom for their priſoners; and when they find they have not the advantage in any ſkirmiſhes, they inſtantly ſeparate, and hide themſelves in hedges, buſhes, or holes under ground, ſo that they ſeem to diſappear, no one knows whither.

'Sir William Windſor, who has longer made war in Ireland than any other Engliſh knight, has never been able, during his reſidence among them, to learn correctly their manners, nor the condition of the Iriſh people. They are a very hardy race, of great ſubtlety, and of various tempers, paying no attention to cleanlineſs, nor to any gentleman, although their country is governed by kings, of whom there are ſeveral, but ſeem deſirous to remain in the ſavage ſtate they have been brought up in.

'True it is, that four of the moſt potent kings in Ireland have ſubmitted to the king of England, but more through love and good humour, than by battle or force. The earl of Ormond, whoſe lands

lands join their kingdoms, took great pains to induce them to go to Dublin, where the king our lord reſided, and to ſubmit themſelves to him and to the crown of England.

'This was conſidered by every one as a great acquiſition, and the object of the armament accompliſhed; for, during the whole of king Edward's reign, of happy memory, he had never ſuch ſucceſs as king Richard. The honour is great, but the advantage little, for with ſuch ſavages nothing can be done. I will tell you an inſtance of their ſavageneſs, that it may ſerve as an example to other nations You may depend on its truth; for I was an eye-witneſs of what I ſhall relate, as they were about a month under my care and governance at Dublin, to teach them the uſages of England, by orders of the king and council, becauſe I knew their language as well as I did French and Engliſh, for in my youth I was educated among them; and earl Thomas, father of the preſent earl of Ormond, kept me with him, out of affection, for my good horſemanſhip.

'It happened that the earl above mentioned was ſent with three hundred lances and one thouſand archers to make war on the Iriſh; for the Engliſh had kept up a conſtant warfare againſt them, in hopes of bringing them under their ſubjection. The earl of Ormond, whoſe lands bordered on his opponents, had that day mounted me on one of his beſt horſes, and I rode by his ſide. The Iriſh having formed an ambuſcade to ſurprize the Engliſh, advanced from it; but were ſo ſharply at-

attacked by the archers, whoſe arrows they could not withſtand, for they are not armed againſt them, that they ſoon retreated. The earl purſued them, and I, who was well mounted, kept cloſe by him: it chanced that in this purſuit my horſe took fright, and ran away with me, in ſpite of all my efforts, into the midſt of the enemy. My friends could never overtake me; and, in paſſing through the Iriſh, one of them, by a great feat of agility, leaped on the back of my horſe, and held me tight with both his arms, but did me no harm with lance or knife. He preſſed my horſe forward for more than two hours, and conducted him to a large buſh, in a very retired ſpot, where he found his companions who had run thither to eſcape the Engliſh.

'He ſeemed much rejoiced to have made me his priſoner, and carried me to his houſe, which was ſtrong, and in a town ſurrounded with wood, paliſades and ſtagnant water: the name of this town was Herpelin*. The gentleman who had taken me was called Brin Coſteret†, a very handſome man. I have frequently made inquiries after him, and hear that he is ſtill alive, but very old. This Bryan Coſteret kept me with him ſeven years, and gave me his daughter in marriage, by whom I have two girls. I will tell you how I obtained my liberty. It happened in the ſeventh year of my captivity, that one of their kings, Arthur Mac-

* Herpelin. in MSS. Herpelepin.

† Brin Coſteret. Q. Bryan Coſteret.

que-

quemair, king of Leinſter, raiſed an army againſt Lionel duke of Clarence, ſon to king Edward of England, and both armies met very near the city of Leinſter. In the battle that followed, many were ſlain and taken on both ſides; but, the Engliſh gaining the day, the Iriſh were forced to fly, and the king of Leinſter eſcaped. The father of my wife was made priſoner, under the banner of the duke of Clarence: and as Bryan Coſteret was mounted on my horſe, which was remembered to have belonged to the earl of Ormond, it was then firſt known that I was alive, that he had honourably entertained me at his houſe in Herpelin, and given me his daughter in marriage.

'The duke of Clarence, ſir William Windſor, and all of our party, were well pleaſed to hear this news, and he was offered his liberty, on condition that he gave me mine, and ſent me to the Engliſh army, with my wife and children. He at firſt refuſed the terms, from his love to me, his daughter and our children; but, when he found no other terms would be accepted, he agreed to them, provided my eldeſt daughter remained with him. I returned to England with my wife and youngeſt daughter, and fixed my reſidence at Briſtol. My two children are married: the one eſtabliſhed in Ireland has three boys and two girls, and her ſiſter four ſons and two daughters.

'Becauſe the Iriſh language is as familiar to me as Engliſh, for I have always ſpoken it in my family, and introduced it among my grandchildren as much as I can, I have been choſen by our lord

and

and king to teach and accuſtom the four Iriſh kings, who have ſworn obedience for ever to England, to the manners of the Engliſh. I muſt ſay, that theſe kings who were under my management were of coarſe manners and underſtandings; and, in ſpite of all that I could do to ſoften their language and nature, very little progreſs has been made, for they would frequently return to their former coarſe behaviour.

'I will more particularly relate the charge that was given me over them, and how I managed it. The king of England intended theſe four kings ſhould adopt the manners, appearance and dreſs of the Engliſh, for he wanted to create them knights. He gave them firſt a very handſome houſe in the city of Dublin for themſelves and attendants, where I was ordered to reſide with them, and never to leave the houſe without an abſolute neceſſity. I lived with them for three or four days, without any way interfering, that we might become accuſtomed to each other, and I allowed them to act juſt as they pleaſed. I obſerved, that as they ſat at table, they made grimaces, that did not ſeem to me graceful nor becoming, and I reſolved in my own mind to make them drop that cuſtom.

'When theſe kings were ſeated at table, and the firſt diſh was ſerved, they would make their minſtrels and principal ſervants ſit beſide them, and eat from their plates and drink from their cups. They told me, this was a praiſeworthy cuſtom of their country, where every thing was in common but the bed. I permitted this to be done

done for three days; but on the fourth I ordered the tables to be laid out and covered properly, placing the four kings at an upper table, the minſtrels at another below, and the ſervants lower ſtill. They looked at each other, and refuſed to eat, ſaying I had deprived them of their old cuſtom in which they had been brought up.

'I replied with a ſmile, to appeaſe them, that their cuſtom was not decent nor ſuitable to their rank, nor would it be honourable for them to continue it; for that now they ſhould conform to the manners of the Engliſh; and to inſtruct them in theſe particulars was the motive of my reſidence with them, having been ſo ordered by the king of England and his council. When they heard this they made no further oppoſition to whatever I propoſed, from having placed themſelves under the obedience of England, and continued good humouredly to perſevere in it as long as I ſtaid with them.

'They had another cuſtom I knew to be common in the country, which was the not wearing breeches. I had, in conſequence, plenty of breeches made of linen and cloth, which I gave to the kings and their attendants, and accuſtomed them to wear them. I took away many rude articles, as well in their dreſs as other things, and had great difficulty at the firſt to induce them to wear robes of ſilken cloth, trimmed with ſquirrel-ſkin or minever, for the kings only wrapped themſelves up in an Iriſh cloak. In riding, they neither uſed ſaddles nor

ſtirrups, and I had ſome trouble to make them conform in this reſpect to the Engliſh manners.

'I once made inquiry concerning their faith; but they ſeemed ſo much diſpleaſed, I was forced to ſilence: they ſaid they believed in God and the Trinity, without any difference from our creed. I aſked which pope they were inclined to: they replied, without heſitation, 'To that at Rome.'

'I inquired if they would like to receive the order of knighthood? for the king would willingly create them ſuch, after the uſual modes of France, England, and other countries. They ſaid they were knights already, which ought to ſatisfy them. I aſked when they were made: they anſwered, at ſeven years old; that in Ireland a king makes his ſon a knight, and ſhould the child have loſt his father, then the neareſt relation; and the young knight begins to learn to tilt with a light lance againſt a ſhield fixed to a poſt in a field, and the more lances he breaks the more honour he acquires. 'By this method,' added they, 'are our young knights trained, more eſpecially king's ſons.'

'Although I aſked this, I was before well acquainted with the manner of educating their children to arms. I made no further reply than by ſaying, this kind of childiſh knighthood would not ſatisfy the king of England, and that he would create them in another mode. They aſked, 'In what manner?' 'In church, with moſt ſolemn ceremonies;' and I believe they paid attention to what I ſaid.

'About

'About two days after, the king was deſirous to create theſe kings knights; and the earl of Ormond, who underſtood and ſpoke Iriſh well, as his lands join the territories of the kings, was ſent to wait on them, that they might have more confidence in the meſſage from the king and council. On his arrival, they ſhewed him every reſpect, which he returned, as he knew well how to do, and they ſeemed happy at his coming. He began a moſt friendly converſation with them, and inquired if they were ſatisfied with my conduct and behaviour. They replied, 'Perfectly well: he has prudently and wiſely taught us the manners and uſages of his country, for which we ought to be obliged, and do thank him.'

'This anſwer was agreeable to the earl of Ormond, for it ſhewed ſenſe; and then, by degrees, he began to talk of the order of knighthood they were to receive, explaining to them every article and ceremony of it, and how great a value ſhould be ſet on it, and how thoſe who were created knights behaved. The whole of the earl's converſation was very pleaſing to the four kings, whom, however, as I have not yet named, I will now do: firſt, Aneel the great, king of Mecte*; ſecondly, Brun de Thomond, king of Thomond and of Aire†; the third, Arthur Macquemaire, king of Leinſter; and the fourth Contruo, king of

* Aneel the great, king of Mecte. Q. O'Neale the great, king of Meath.

† Thomond and Aire. Q. Ulſter.

Cheveno and Erpe*. They were made knights by the hand of the king of England, on the feaſt of our Lady in March, which that year fell on a Thurſday, in the cathedral of Dublin, that was founded by Saint John the Baptiſt. The four kings watched all the Wedneſday-night in the cathedral; and on the morrow, after maſs, they were created knights, with much ſolemnity. There were knighted at the ſame time ſir Thomas Orphem†, ſir Joathas Pado, and his couſin ſir John Pado. The four kings were very richly dreſſed, ſuitable to their rank, and that day dined at the table of king Richard, where they were much ſtared at by the lords and thoſe preſent: not indeed without reaſon; for they were ſtrange figures, and differently countenanced to the Engliſh or other nations. We are naturally inclined to gaze at any thing ſtrange, and it was certainly, ſir John, at that time, a great novelty to ſee four Iriſh kings.'

'Sir Henry, I readily believe you, and would have given a good deal if I could have been there. Laſt year I had made arrangements for coming to England, and ſhould have done ſo, had I not heard of the death of queen Anne, which made me poſtpone my journey. But I wiſh to aſk you one thing, which has much ſurpriſed me: I ſhould like to know how theſe four Iriſh kings have ſo readily ſubmitted to king Richard, when his valiant grandfather, who

* Contruo, king of Cheveno and Erpe. Q. O'Connor, king of Connaught.

† Sir Thomas Orphem.—MSS. Ourghém and Gourghem.

was

was ſo much redoubted every where, could never reduce them to obedience, and was always at war with them. You have ſaid it was brought about by a treaty and the grace of God: the grace of God is good, and of infinite value to thoſe who can obtain it; but we ſee few lords now-a-days augment their territories otherwiſe than by force. When I ſhall be returned to my native country of Hainault, and ſpeak of theſe matters, I ſhall be ſtrictly examined concerning them; for our lord duke Albert of Bavaria, earl of Holland, Hainault and Zealand, and his ſon William of Hainault, ſtile themſelves lords of Frieſland, an extenſive country, over which they claim the government, as their predeceſſors have done before them; but the Frieſlanders refuſe to acknowledge their right, and will not by any means ſubmit themſelves to their obedience.'

To this Henry Caſtide anſwered: 'In truth, ſir John, I cannot more fully explain how it was brought about; but it is generally believed by moſt of our party, that the Iriſh were exceedingly frightened at the great force the king landed in Ireland, where it remained for nine months. Their coaſts were ſo ſurrounded, that neither proviſion nor merchandiſe could be landed; but the inland natives were indifferent to this, as they are unacquainted with commerce, nor do they wiſh to know any thing of it, but ſimply to live like wild beaſts. Thoſe who reſide on the coaſt oppoſite to England are better informed, and accuſtomed to traffic. King Edward, of happy memory, had in his reign

ſo many wars to provide for, in France, Brittany, Gaſcony and Scotland, that his forces were diſperſed in different quarters, and he was unable to ſend any great armament to Ireland. When the Iriſh found ſo large a force was now come againſt them, they conſidered it moſt adviſeable to ſubmit themſelves to the king of England.

'Formerly, when Saint Edward, who had been canoniſed, and was worſhipped with much ſolemnity by the Engliſh, was their king, he thrice defeated the Danes on ſea and land. This Saint Edward, king of England, lord of Ireland and of Aquitaine*, the Iriſh loved and feared more than any other king of England before or ſince. It was for this reaſon, that when our king went thither laſt year, he laid aſide the leopards and flower de luces, and bore the arms of Saint Edward emblazoned on all his banners: theſe were a croſs patencé or, on a field gules, with four doves argent on the ſhield or banner, as you pleaſe. This we heard was very pleaſing to the Iriſh, and inclined them more to ſubmiſſion, for in truth the anceſtors of theſe four kings had done homage and ſervice to Saint Edward: they alſo conſidered king Richard as a prudent and conſcientious man, and have therefore paid their homage in the like manner as was done to Saint Edward.

* This muſt be a miſtake; for Aquitaine was brought to the crown of England by the marriage of Eleanora, the divorced queen of Louis le Jeune, king of France, with Henry II.

'Thus

'Thus I have related to you how our king accompliſhed the object of his expedition to Ireland. Keep it in your memory, that when returned home you may inſert it in your chronicle, with other hiſtories that are connected with it.' 'Henry,' ſaid I, 'you have well ſpoken, and it ſhall be done.' Upon this, we ſeparated; and, meeting ſoon after the herald March, I ſaid,—'March, tell me what are the arms of Henry Caſtide; for I have found him very agreeable, and he has kindly related to me the hiſtory of the king's expedition to Ireland, and of the four Iriſh kings, who, as he ſays, were under his governance upwards of fifteen days.' March replied, 'He bears for arms a chevron gules on a field argent, with three beſants gules, two above the chevron and one below.'

All theſe things I retained in my memory, and put on paper, for I wiſhed not to forget them.

CHAP. XXV.

THE DUKE OF LANCASTER IS ORDERED BACK FROM AQUITAINE.—KING RICHARD RECEIVES A FRIENDLY ANSWER TO THE PROPOSALS HIS AMBASSADORS HAD MADE TO THE KING OF FRANCE FOR A MARRIAGE BETWEEN HIM AND THE LADY ISABELLA, PRINCESS OF FRANCE.

I REMAINED in the houſehold of the king of England as long as I pleaſed: but I was not always in the ſame place, for the king frequently changed his abode. He went to Eltham, Leeds-aſtle, Kingſton, Shene, Chertſey and Windſor; none very far from London.

I was told for truth, that the king and his council had written to the duke of Lancaſter to return to England, for thoſe from Aquitaine had boldly declared they would not ſubmit to any other lord but the king of England. This had been determined on by ſo large a majority of the council that the duke of Gloceſter, anxious as he was to keep his brother out of England, could not prevail that the gift the king had made him ſhould be perſevered in.

The whole council were fearful of the conſequences: they were perfectly aware of what the deputies from Gaſcony had meant by their ſpeeches; for they declared, that ſhould the

duchy

duchy of Aquitaine be alienated from the crown of England, it would in times to come be very prejudicial to its intereſts. They were unwilling, therefore, to riſk ſuch a loſs, as the towns of Bordeaux and Bayonne had always ſtrongly ſupported the cauſe of England. This was not forgotten to be urged in the council during the abſence of the duke of Gloceſter; but when he was preſent none dared to declare their real ſentiments. The affair, therefore, was not further preſſed.

I will now ſay ſomething of the earl of Rutland, the earl marſhal and the other Engliſh ambaſſadors, that had been ſent to France to treat of a marriage between king Richard and the young daughter of the king of France, who was not then more than eight years old, and tell how they proſpered. Theſe ambaſſadors continued their journey from Calais, through Amiens, Clermont in Beauvoiſis, to Paris: wherever they paſſed, they were moſt honourably received, according to orders that had been given by the king of France and his council. They were lodged at Paris near the Croix du Tiroir, and their attendants and horſes, to the amount of five hundred, in the adjacent ſtreets. The king of France reſided at the Louvre, the queen and her children at the hôtel de Saint Pol, the duke of Berry at the hôtel de Nèle, the duke of Burgundy at the hôtel d'Artois: the duke of Bourbon, the duke of Orleans, the count de Saint Pol and the lord de Coucy were at their own hôtels; for the king had ſummoned the whole of his council, that he might be the better adviſed what

what anſwer to make to the Engliſh lords. He had ordered that two hundred crowns of France ſhould be paid during their ſtay in Paris, for the expenſes of them and their horſes.

The principal lords, ſuch as the earl of Rutland and the earl marſhal, were frequently with the king, and ſtaid dinner: the king, his brother and uncles, ſhewed them every attention, from reſpect to the king of England. The ambaſſadors demanded an anſwer to their propoſals, but were ſome time put off with excuſes; for it was matter of great ſurpriſe to every one that the Engliſh ſhould be ſo forward to offer ſuch an alliance after the bitter war that had been carried on between the two nations, for ſuch a length of time. Some in the council ſaid,—'How will it be poſſible for the king, our lord, to give his daughter in marriage to his adverſary the king of England? We think, that before ſuch a meaſure can take place, there ought to be a ſolid peace eſtabliſhed between France, England, and their allies.' This and many other points were agitated in the privy council of France.

There was at this period a very wiſe chancellor of France, called ſir Arnaud de Corbie: he ſaw far into events likely to happen, and knew well the different intereſts that ſwayed the kingdom. He ſaid to the king and his uncles,—'My lords, we ought to go ſtraight forward in this buſineſs; for king Richard of England ſhews plainly that he wiſhes nothing but affection to France, ſince he is deſirous to ally himſelf with us by marriage. We have

have had two conferences for peace at Amiens and at Leulinghen, but neither were brought to any better concluſion than a prolongation of the truce. We know for certain, that the duke of Gloceſter is in oppoſition to the king of England and his two brothers of Lancaſter and of York, in every thing relative to a peace with France. Neither the king of England nor any others who wiſh for peace can make him change his ſentiments, but in the end he will not be able to withſtand the king. Let us therefore make the moſt of this overture, and give the ambaſſadors ſuch an anſwer that they may return ſatisfied.' The king of France and his uncles agreed with the chancellor, more eſpecially the duke of Burgundy, who was ſo tired of war that he was anxious for peace on almoſt any terms. He was principally induced to this from his territories of Flanders, which he held in right of his ducheſs, being oppoſite to the ſhores of England; and the hearts of the Flemings were more inclined to the Engliſh than the French, from the commerce that was carried on between the two countries.

It was determined in the privy council, that the hearty welcome which had been made to the Engliſh ſhould be continued: the king particularly willed it ſo: and it was adviſed (whether through diſſimulation or not) that the ambaſſadors from England ſhould receive kind anſwers, and have hopes given them before their departure that the king of England's propoſal would be complied with.

The

The queen of France reſided at the hôtel of St. Pol on the banks of the Seine; and, the better to pleaſe the Engliſh lords, their requeſt was granted, to viſit the queen and children, and eſpecially the princeſs whom they were ſoliciting for their queen, as they were impatient to ſee her. This had been at firſt refuſed, for the council excuſed themſelves, by ſaying that ſhe was but a child; and that, at her age of eight years, nothing could be judged of what ſhe might turn out. She had, however, been well educated, as ſhe ſhewed the Engliſh lords when they waited upon her; for when the lord marſhal had dropped on his knees, ſaying, 'Madam, if it pleaſe God, you ſhall be our lady and queen,' ſhe replied inſtantly, and without any one adviſing her, 'Sir, if it pleaſe God, and my lord and father, that I be queen of England, I ſhall be well pleaſed thereat; for I have been told I ſhall then be a great lady.' She made the earl marſhal riſe, and, taking him by the hand, led him to the queen, who was much pleaſed at her anſwer, as were all who heard it.

The appearance and manners of this young princeſs were very agreeable to the Engliſh ambaſſadors; and they thought among themſelves that ſhe would be a lady of high honour and great worth. When they had ſtaid at Paris more than twenty days, having all their expenſes defrayed by the king of France, they received favourable anſwers to their demands from the king and council, with great hopes that the object of their miſſion would be accompliſhed, but not immediately; for the prin-

princeſs was very young, and had likewiſe been betrothed to the ſon of the duke of Brittany. This obſtacle they were told muſt be firſt got over, before any thing further could be done in the matter: it muſt therefore remain in this ſtate the enſuing winter: during Lent the king of France would ſend information of what had been done to the king of England; and, when the days ſhould be lengthened, the weather fine, and the ſea calm, they might return, or any others whom the king of England ſhould prefer to ſend, and they would be well received by the king and council of France.

This anſwer was ſatisfactory to the Engliſh ambaſſadors. They took leave of the queen, her daughter the lady Iſabella, the brother and uncles of the king, and of all of whom it was neceſſary to take leave, and left Paris, following the ſame road they had come from Calais. The earl of Rutland and earl marſhal, who were the principals in this embaſſy, haſtened, before any of their attendants, to carry the news of what they had done to the king of England. They landed at Sandwich, and in leſs than a day and a half arrived at Windſor, where the king then was. He was much rejoiced at their arrival, and with the anſwers they had brought back. He did not neglect this buſineſs; for his mind was ſo much occupied with it, that his whole thoughts were employed on the means of obtaining the daughter of France for his queen. If the king of England was thus

buſily

buſily employed, the king and council of France were not leſs ſo, in turning their thoughts how they could make the moſt of this marriage to the honour and advantage of their country.

Many ſpoke of it, ſaying,—'If our advice were aſked on the matter, and liſtened to, we would ſay, that the king of England ſhould never have a princeſs of France until a firm peace were made between the two kingdoms and their allies. What good can be looked to from this connection to either country? for the moment the truces expire, and they have but three years to run, the war will recommence with as much inveteracy as before. Theſe things ought to be well conſidered.' The dukes of Berry and Orleans, with many of the great barons of France, were of this opinion, which was well known to the king, the duke of Burgundy, and to the chancellor, who were eager for any peace that ſhould not be diſhonourable to the crown of France.

CHAP. XXVI

A SQUIRE OF NORMANDY, CALLED ROBERT THE HERMIT, HAVING DECLARED HE HAD SEEN A VISION, WHILE AT SEA, ORDERING HIM TO INTERFERE IN MAKING A PEACE BETWEEN FRANCE AND ENGLAND, IS SENT TO KING RICHARD AND HIS UNCLES TO THIS EFFECT.

AT this period, a valiant and prudent ſquire returned home to France: he had travelled much beyond ſea, and his voyages and travels had gained him great renown, both at home and abroad, wherever they were known. This ſquire was from the country of Caux in Normandy, and his name was Robert Menuot*, but he was called Robert the Hermit. He was of a religious and holy life, of fair ſpeech, and might be about fifty years old. He had attended the conferences at Leulinghen between the lords of France and England, where his diſcourſes had been well liſtened to.

When Robert left Syria to return home, he embarked at Baruth, but had when at ſea a furious tempeſt, ſo that, for two days and a night, he and his companions were in ſuch danger they thought they muſt be loſt. Perſons in ſuch peril are gene-

* Robert Menuot. MSS. Mennot.

rally

rally very repentant and contrite, and have a greater fear of God. It happened, toward the end of the ſtorm, when the weather and ſea became ſomewhat calmer, that a figure as bright as chryſtal appeared to Robert, and ſaid; 'Robert, thou ſhalt eſcape from this peril, as well as thy companions for thy ſake, for God has favourably heard thy prayers. He orders thee by me to return to France as ſpeedily as thou canſt, and inſtantly on thy arrival to wait on the king, and relate what has befallen thee. Thou wilt tell him to liſten to peace with his adverſary the king of England, for their wars have laſted too long. Do thou interfere boldly when conferences ſhall be holden to treat of peace between king Charles and king Richard, for thou ſhalt be heard; and all thoſe who ſhall any way oppoſe or prevent peace from taking effect, ſhall dearly pay for their wickedneſs in their lifetime.'

Upon this, the voice ceaſed and the figure vaniſhed, leaving Robert very penſive on what he had heard. He, however, believed that what he had ſeen came from Heaven: and from that moment they had wind and weather to their wiſhes, which brought them to Genoa.

Robert, on landing, took leave of his fellow-paſſengers, and made the beſt of his way to Avignon, where the firſt thing he did was to pay his devotions in the church of St. Peter. Finding there the grand penitentiary, he confeſſed himſelf duly and devoutly to him, relating the viſion you have juſt read, and aſked his advice how he ſhould

act

act on the occaſion. The penitentiary ſtrictly enjoined him not to mention the viſion to any one, before he had told it to the king of France, according to the orders given him, and that whatever the king ſhould command he muſt do.

Robert followed this advice, and dreſſing himſelf in plain grey cloth, with very ſimple attendants, left Avignon, and continued his journey to Paris, where he heard that the king was at Abbeville to be near the conference at Amiens between the French and Engliſh. He immediately went to the abbey of St. Peter, where the king was lodged, at Abbeville, and was introduced to the preſence by a Norman knight, his neareſt relation, called ſir William Martel, who was of the king's chamber. Robert minutely related every thing that had happened to him, which the king liſtened to with great attention; but, as the duke of Burgundy and ſir Arnaud de Corbie, chancellor of France, the two moſt active commiſſioners for France, were abſent at the conference, he ſaid to Robert,—'Our council are at Leulinghen: you will remain here until they ſhall return, when I will talk with my uncle of Burgundy and the chancellor, and act according as they ſhall beſt adviſe me.' 'God aſſiſt them!' anſwered Robert.

This ſame week the commiſſioners returned to Abbeville from the conference, bringing with them a project for peace. The Engliſh had inſerted articles of ſuch importance as a preliminary, that they had refuſed to admit them without knowing firſt the king's will on the ſubject, and on their

arrival they laid them before his majeſty. The king took his uncle of Burgundy and the chancellor aſide, to inform them of what Robert the hermit had told him, and to know if it ought to be believed and acted upon. They having looked at each other ſome time in ſilence, ſaid they would examine this Robert themſelves, and then would give him their opinion. Robert was ſent for, and, being not far from where theſe ſecret councils were held, ſoon arrived. On his admiſſion, he paid the king and the duke of Burgundy much reſpect; and the king ſaid, 'Repeat once more, very minutely, all that you told me.' 'Willingly, ſire,' replied Robert. He then detailed all you have before heard of his adventures and viſion, to which they attentively liſtened; and when he had done, they deſired him to leave the chamber, theſe three only remaining together. The king aſked the duke of Burgundy what he thought of it: 'My lord,' ſaid he, 'the chancellor and myſelf will conſider of it, and give you our anſwer to-morrow.' 'Very well,' anſwered the king.

The duke and the chancellor conſulted a long time by themſelves, on this matter, and on their mode of acting; for they ſaw the king believed the whole, and was deſirous that Robert ſhould be added to them as a commiſſioner, for he was ſo eloquent he converted the hearts of all who heard him. They at laſt reſolved, that if Robert ſhould publicly declare the orders he had received in his viſion it would be adviſeable for him to come to Leulinghen and explain it to the lords of England, and

and all who wiſhed to hear it; that it was lawful ſo to act; and this was the anſwer they made to the king on the enſuing day.

When the duke of Burgundy and the chancellor returned to the conference, they carried Robert the hermit with them, who was ready enough to ſpeak what you have heard. On the lords of France and England being aſſembled, Robert came in the midſt of them, and eloquently told the viſion he had at ſea, and maintained, by a long harangue, that what it ſaid was by divine inſpiration, and that God had ſent it to him, becauſe he willed it ſhould be ſo. Some of the Engliſh lords, ſuch as the duke of Lancaſter, the earl of Saliſbury, ſir Thomas Percy, ſir William Clanvow, the biſhops of Saint David's and London, were inclined to credit what Robert related; but the duke of Gloceſter and the earl of Arundel paid not any regard to it, and, when at their lodgings, in the abſence of the French lords, ſaid it was only a cheat, and a ſtory made up to laugh at and deceive them. They unanimouſly reſolved to write to king Richard every particular of what Robert the hermit had ſaid and ſeen. This was done, and the letters given to a knight of the king's chamber, called ſir Richard Credon, who found the king at a handſome palace in Kent, called Leeds caſtle. He preſented the king letters from his commiſſioners at Leulinghen, which gave him a full detail of every thing relative to Robert the hermit.

The king took much delight in peruſing theſe letters at his leiſure, and, when he came to

part that related to Robert the hermit, he ſaid, he ſhould be glad to ſee and hear this Robert; for he was inclined to believe that what he ſaid had happened to him, might be true. He wrote back to the duke of Lancaſter and the earl of Saliſbury, to preſs them to exert themſelves, that a firm peace ſhould be eſtabliſhed between him, the king of France and his allies; for, as Robert the hermit had ſaid, the wars had laſted too long, and it was full time to hit upon ſome means to procure peace.

I have before related the whole of this matter; and that as nothing was concluded, in regard to a peace, a truce had been agreed on by the commiſſioners on each ſide, before they ſeparated, between the two kingdoms and their allies, to laſt for four years, while, in the mean time, they would ſtudy to promote a laſting peace. Such were the intentions of the Engliſh commiſſioners, with the exception of the duke of Gloceſter; for he was reſolved, on his return to England, to oppoſe any peace with France; but he diſſembled then his real ſentiments, to pleaſe the king and his brother of Lancaſter. Thus did I become acquainted with what paſſed relative to Robert the hermit.

Shortly after the return of the earl of Rutland, the earl marſhal, the archbiſhop of Dublin, ſir Hugh Deſpencer, ſir Lewis Clifford, and thoſe who had been attached to the embaſſy to France, bringing with them friendly anſwers relative to the marriage, the parliament aſſembled at Weſtminſter. Theſe parliaments laſt uſually four days,

when all buſineſs relative to the country is ſettled.

At the meeeing of this parliament the duke of Lancaſter returned from Bordeaux, whither he had been ſent as duke of Aquitaine, for the inhabitants had refuſed to receive him in that quality. But I have mentioned theſe things before, and ſhall therefore ſay no more on the ſubject. The duke of Lancaſter, on his return to England, was well received by the king and lords, as was right, and they diſcourſed on various buſineſs together.

As ſoon as it was known in France that the duke of Lancaſter was in England, the king and his council reſolved to ſend thither Robert the hermit, with credential letters to the king of England, who was deſirous of ſeeing him; and that, when he ſhould come back to France, the eount de Saint Pol would go thither.

Robert the hermit would be well received by the king and lords of England, who would cheerfully attend to all he ſhould relate of the affairs of Syria, Tartary, of Bajazet and Turkey, where he had reſided a long time; for of ſuch matters the Engliſh lords are very curious. Robert was ordered to make his preparations for going to England, which much pleaſed him, ſaying he would willingly go thither, as it was a country he had never ſeen.

Credential letters were given him from the king of France to king Richard and to his uncles. Robert left Paris with his array of only ſeven horſes, but all his expenſes, as was juſt, were to be paid

by the king of France,) and travelled to Boulogne, where he embarked and croſſed to Dover. He went thence to Eltham, a palace of the king of England, ſeven miles from London, and met there the king, the duke of Lancaſter, the earls of Saliſbury and Huntingdon, and ſir Thomas Percy, who ſhewed him much attention, in honour to the king of France, as did their ſovereign, from his deſire to ſee him. He gave his letters to the king and the other lords, who peruſed them with pleaſure; but the duke of Glocester was, I believe, at this time at a caſtle of his called Pleſhy, in Eſſex. When Robert had remained at Eltham with the king and his court five days, he took his leave, and departed to viſit the duke of Glocester. With this intent he rode to London, and, on the next day, continued his journey, and lay at a town, fifteen miles from London, called Brehonde*, and on the morrow arrived at Pleſhy, where he was handſomely received by the duke and ducheſs and their children.

Robert delivered his letters from the king of France to the duke, who, on finding they were credential letters, took Robert aſide, and demanded the cauſe of his coming. Robert replied, that he would tell him at his leiſure, for that he was not come to make a ſhort viſit. 'Well,' ſaid the duke, 'you are very welcome.' Robert the hermit was well acquainted with the double character of the duke, and that he was violent againſt a peace

* Brehonde. Q. Brentwood. Burntwood.

with

with France, and in ſtrong oppoſition to the king and his brother of Lancaſter, who were welinclined to put an end to the war. He knew not well how to begin on this buſineſs, nor what means to urge to make him change his opinion; for he had witneſſed his violence at Leulinghen, and knew that a war with France was uppermoſt in his thoughts. This, however, did not prevent Robert from talking to the duke of Gloceſter reſpecting a peace; but he found the duke cold and reſerved in his anſwers. He ſaid, 'that he had two elder brothers, of Lancaſter and York, and that it was to them ſuch affairs ought to be addreſſed, in preference to him; beſides, ſuppoſing he was willing to agree to a peace, perhaps the reſt of the nation would not conſent.'

'My very dear lord,' replied Robert, 'for the love of our LORD JESUS CHRIST do not oppoſe a peace: you can do a great deal towards forming one; and you know how much your king and nephew is inclined to it, who, beſides, is anxious to ſtrengthen the love between the two kingdoms, by a marriage with the daughter of the king of France.'

To this the duke anſwered,—'Robert, although you are at this moment in high favour, and well liſtened to by the kings and lords of both countries, the matter of peace is of ſo much conſideration, that perſons of greater weight than you muſt interfere in it. I repeat to you, what I have frequently ſaid at different places and times, that I ſhall never be againſt a peace that is honourable to

my country. All that in a former peace was agreed upon with the king my father, and my brother the prince of Wales, and confirmed by the oath of king John, for himſelf and ſucceſſors, under penalty of excommunication by the pope, has not been kept, and their oaths are of no value. The French have fraudulently broken the articles of this peace, and have even taken poſſeſſion, by treachery and force, of thoſe lands, caſtles and towns, that were given up at the peace to our late king and father, and to his ſucceſſors. Beſides, of the three millions of francs which were to be paid as the ranſom of king John, ſix hundred thouſand are yet unpaid.

'Theſe matters, Robert, being ſo freſh in our memory, trouble us greatly, and make us cautious; and we wonder (I ſpeak not only of myſelf but of others who have a right to interfere in the government) how our king ſhould be ſo thoughtleſs that he does not compare paſt times with the preſent; and how he can think of uniting himſelf with his enemies, and thereby diſinheriting the crown of England of all future advantage.'

'Dear lord,' replied Robert, 'our LORD JESUS CHRIST ſuffered on the croſs for us ſinners; but he forgave, at his death, thoſe who had crucified him. It is neceſſary, therefore, that we in like manner forgive our enemies, if we expect to be admitted to the glories of paradiſe. All hatred, malice and ill will were put an end to, and mutually

ally pardoned, the day the peace was ſigned by your anceſtor at Calais.

'War was afterwards renewed with bitterneſs between the two countries, through faults and deceptions on each ſide; for, when the prince of Wales returned from Caſtille to Aquitaine, a ſet of people, called Companions, the greater part of whom were Engliſh, or Gaſcons dependant on the king of England or the prince, collected together and entered France, without the ſmalleſt title of reaſon, and carried thither a more diſaſtrous war than the preceding one. They called the kingdom of France their manor, and were ſo determined on miſchief there was no reſiſting them: for this reaſon, when the realm was ſo oppreſſed, and the evils daily multiplying, king Charles, ſon to king John, was adviſed by his vaſſals to provide a remedy, and oppoſe ſuch conduct by open war or otherwiſe.

'Many great barons of Gaſcony at this time allied themſelves with the king of France, whom the prince of Wales, who ought to have been their lord, wanted to oppreſs and bring more under his power, as they ſaid and wanted to prove by various facts, but which they would not longer ſuffer. They made war on the prince, in conformity to their appeal to the king of France, who, by the advice of his council, joined them in order to get rid of theſe free companies that ravaged France. Many lords, towns and caſtles turned to the king of France from the oppreſſions they laboured

boured under from the prince, or thoſe employed by him.

'Thus was the war renewed with more inveteracy than before, to the deſtruction of the people and country, as well as the weakening the faith of GOD. This laſt is ſo ſenſibly felt in Chriſtendom that the enemies of our faith, much emboldened, have already conquered great part of Greece, and the empire of Conſtantinople, through fault of not reſiſting a Turk called Baſant, ſurnamed Amorabaquin*. He has conquered the whole kingdom of Armenia, with the exception of the ſingle town of Courch, ſituated on the ſea ſhore, like Southampton or Briſtol in this country.

'The Genoeſe and Venetians hold this againſt the Turks; but they cannot long withſtand the power of Bajazet, emperor of Conſtantinople, who is of your blood, for he is the ſon of Hugh de Luſignan, by the lady Mary de Bourbon, coſin-german to the queen your mother. But ſhould there be peace (as there will, if it pleaſe GOD) between France and England, all knights and ſquires deſirous of glory, and of exalting their names, will haſten thither, and aſſiſt the king of Armenia to drive out the Turks from his kingdom. The war has continued too long between France and England, and all thoſe who may any

* This Amorabaquin, ſo much disfigured, was the ſultan Bajazet, who aſcended the throne 1391. He was ſurnamed, like his father, l'Amurath Bacquin, according to the MSS. in the Britiſh Muſeum.

way

way oppoſe or delay the bleſſings of peace will ſeverely be puniſhed in this life for ſo doing.'

'How do you know that?' ſaid the duke of Gloceſter.

'Dear lord,' anſwered Robert, 'all I ſay comes from divine inſpiration, and was given me in a viſion as I was returning by ſea from Baruth in Syria towards the iſland of Rhodes.' He then related fully all he had ſeen and heard in this viſion, the more effectually to move the heart of the duke of Gloceſter to liſten to terms of peace. But the heart of the duke was hardened againſt peace, and he always returned to his former opinions, holding in contempt, by his words, the French in all things, notwithſtanding what Robert had ſaid to him: however, as he was a foreigner, and ſeemed eager to do good, and knowing beſide that the king of England wanted to conclude a peace, he diſſembled his real ſentiments as much as he could, and turned the converſation to other ſubjects.

Robert the hermit ſtaid two days and as many nights at Pleſhy with the duke and ducheſs of Gloceſter and their children, who, in outward appearance, made him very welcome. On the third day, he took leave of them, and departed for London; and went thence to Windſor, where the king then reſided. He was handſomely entertained at Windſor, as well in honour to the king of France, who had ſent him, as on account of his eloquence and good manners. It may be ſuppoſed that the king of England inquired of

him ſecretly how he had ſucceeded with his uncle of Gloceſter, and Robert told him truly all that had paſſed.

The king knew well that the duke of Gloceſter would never willingly agree to a peace with France, from his preference to war: he therefore paid much greater court, and ſhewed more affection to his other uncles of Lancaſter and York, and to other prelates and barons of England, who he thought would ſerve him.

Robert the hermit, having been a month or more in England, began to make preparations for his departure. When he took leave of the king and lords, the king made him very rich preſents, out of love to the king of France, as did the dukes of Lancaſter and York, the earls of Huntingdon and Saliſbury, and ſir Thomas Percy. The king had him eſcorted as far as Dover, where he embarked, and landed at Calais: he then journeyed on to Paris, where he found the king and queen of France, and his uncles, to whom he faithfully related the detail of his journey, and the good cheer the king of England had made him.

Meſſengers were almoſt daily paſſing from one king to the other, with the moſt friendly letters from each. The king of England was very impatient to ſucceed in his marriage with the daughter of the king of France, who, on his ſide, had an affection for it, as he did not ſee how he could more nobly marry her.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVII.

THE LORD DE LA RIVIERE AND SIR JOHN LE MERCIER ARE DELIVERED OUT OF PRISON.

THE lord de la Riviere and ſir John le Mercier, after having been carried from priſon to priſon, and to different caſtles, were at laſt given up to the provoſt of the Châtelet, and in daily expectation of being put to death, through the hatred of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, and their adviſers. They had been in this melancholy ſtate for more than two years, without the king being able to aſſiſt them. He, however, would not conſent to their execution; and the dukes of Berry and Burgundy perceived that the duke of Orleans ſtrongly befriended them.

The ducheſs of Berry was inceſſant in her entreaties with her lord in their favour, more particularly for the lord de la Riviere; but they could not condemn one without the other, for they were both implicated in the ſame accuſation. The ſolicitations of many worthy perſons, added to the juſtice of their cauſe, were of much weight: and ſeveral of the great barons of France thought they had now ſufficiently ſuffered, and ſhould be ſet at liberty; for that ſir John le Mercier had wept ſo continually, when in priſon, his ſight was weakened ſo that he could ſcarcely ſee, and it was currently reported he was quite blind.

At

At length, there was an end put to their ſufferings; for the king, although he had conſented to their impriſonment, for reaſons which had been given him, granted them his pardon, deferring further inquiry into what had been laid to their charge until a future opportunity, and when he ſhould be more fully informed. All his lands and caſtles were reſtored to the lord de la Riviere, and, in the firſt inſtance, the beautiful caſtle of Auneau, near Chartres, on the borders of Beauce; but he was ordered thither, and never to recroſs the river Seine, unleſs recalled by the king's own mouth.

Sir John le Mercier returned to his fine houſe of Noviant, of which he bore the title as lord, in the Laonnois; and he had ſimilar orders not to repaſs the rivers Seine, Marne and Oiſe, unleſs ſpecially commanded by the king. They alſo bound themſelves to go to whatever priſon they might hereafter be ordered by the king or by his commiſſioners. The two lords thankfully accepted this grace, and were rejoiced to be delivered from the Châtelet. On gaining their liberty, they thought they ſhould be allowed to ſee the king, and thank him for his mercy, but it was not ſo: they were forced to quit Paris inſtantly, and ſet out for their different eſtates. They, however, obtained their liberty, to the great joy of all who were attached to them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

THE DUKE OF BRITTANY AND SIR OLIVER DE CLISSON ARE RECONCILED.—THE DOWAGER QUEEN OF SICILY INSTITUTES A LAW-SUIT IN THE COURTS OF PARIS AGAINST SIR PETER DE CRAON.

YOU have often heard of the feuds between the duke of Brittany and ſir Oliver de Cliſſon; and that, whenever the two parties met, a deadly engagement enſued, without either ſide ſhewing mercy. In this warfare, however, ſir Oliver had the advantage, for two-thirds of the country were in his favour. The barons of Brittany diſſembled between both; and the citizens of the chief towns told the duke, that this war no way concerned them, and that they would not interfere in it, for that commerce was more eſſential to them than a war with the lord de Cliſſon.

Sir Oliver held them excuſed in regard to him, as they would be mediators in a peace, which the viſcount de Rohan, the lord de Léon and the lord de Dignan, were preſſing on the duke of Brittany, who had declared to theſe three lords, that if he could obtain a meeting with the lord de Cliſſon, he would comply with ſuch terms as they ſhould think honourable to propoſe.

Theſe three barons went to the caſtle where ſir Oliver reſided, and told him how far they had ſucceeded

ſucceeded with the duke, who would at any time grant him and his company paſſports for coming and going; and that they imagined, if once they could meet, all their quarrels would be put an end to.

The lord de Cliſſon replied,—'You are all my friends and relations, and I put my whole confidence in you: I verily believe what you ſay from the duke that he would willingly have me in his preſence; but, as God and my lord St. Yves may help me, I will never on ſuch words or promiſe quit my caſtle. Tell him, ſince he has deputed you here, to ſend me his eldeſt ſon, who ſhall remain as my pledge; and, when he ſhall be arrived, I will wait on him when and where he pleaſes. As my end ſhall be, ſo will be that of his ſon; if I return, he ſhall return; but, if I be detained, ſo ſhall he. Such are my conditions.'

The three barons, ſeeing they could gain no other anſwer, were ſatisfied with it, and, taking their leave in a friendly manner, departed for Vannes, where the duke was waiting for them, and related to him the propoſal from ſir Oliver de Cliſſon. The duke could not obtain other terms; and the lord de Cliſſon had greatly the advantage in this war: the duke conquered nothing from him, while ſir Oliver won ſeveral places from the duke, beſides having twice captured all his gold and ſilver plate, with many precious jewels, all of which he turned to his own profit.

The

The end, however, of this quarrel was as follows: the duke of Brittany, as great a prince as he was, ſaw plainly he could no way bend the lord de Cliſſon to his will, for he had too many friends in Brittany. With the exception of the great barons in the duchy, all the knights, ſquires and inhabitants of the principal towns, inclined to the lord de Cliſſon. The barons diſſembled their ſentiments, and told the duke, they would not interfere in the matter unleſs it ſhould be to mediate a peace, if any means could be found out for ſo doing. The duke of Orleans, in particular, ſupported ſir Oliver underhand in various ways, and he was well pleaſed whenever he received news of the good ſucceſs of his enterpriſes.

The duke of Brittany, who was of a ſubtle imagination, and had laboured hard with many difficulties in his time, weighed all theſe circumſtances; and alſo that he was not beloved by his ſubjects, who would ſhew it, if they dared, without infringing their homage, as well as the children of ſir Charles de Blois ſlain at the battle of Auray; namely John of Brittany, count de Penthievre and Limoges, married to the daughter of the lord de Cliſſon; ſir Henry of Brittany * his brother, and

* Denys Sauvage ſays in a marginal note, that he never heard of this perſonage before, and ſuppoſes that at that period the count de Penthievre had not any brother.

In Anderſon's Royal Genealogies, the lord Charles de Blois had iſſue Guido count de Penthievre, died S. P.,—John, married to Margaret de Cliſſon,—N. N. married to Charles of Spain, conſtable of France, murdered by the king of Navarre,—Mary, wife of Lewis duke of Anjou, ſon of John king of France.

their ſiſter the queen of Naples and Jeruſalem. He felt likewiſe that he was growing old, that his children were young, and except the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, he had not a friend in France who would take care of them, in caſe of his deceaſe; for, by the mother's ſide, they came from the branch of Navarre, which was not a family well beloved in France from the remembrance of the many wicked acts, in former times, of king Charles of Navarre, the ducheſs of Brittany's father. He was therefore afraid, ſhould he die during the ſubſiſting hatred of ſir Oliver de Cliſſon and the count de Penthievre, his children would have too many enemies. He perceived alſo that the Engliſh, who had certainly raiſed him to the honours he now poſſeſſed, were becoming indifferent to his welfare, and would probably increaſe in coolneſs, if the information he had received of the approaching connection between the kings of France and England were true. He had learnt that the treaty of marriage was far advanced between the king of England and the daughter of the king of France, who had been promiſed to his eldeſt ſon.

All theſe things alarmed the duke, but eſpecially what has been laſt mentioned troubled him more than all the reſt. Having fully conſidered them, he reſolved to throw aſide all diſſembling, and openly and honeſtly make peace with ſir Oliver de Cliſſon and John of Brittany; leaving them to ſay what amends, if any, he ſhould make for the damages done them during the war, and for what

had

had happened in former times, reſerving to himſelf the duchy of Brittany, which was to deſcend after him to his children, according to the treaty that had been ſigned, with the approbation of all parties, by the children of ſir Charles de Blois.

This treaty he was not deſirous to have broken: on the contrary, he would that every article ſhould be obſerved, and that it ſhould again be ſworn to and loyally maintained in its whole extent. Should John of Blois, count de Penthievre, not be ſatisfied with his inheritance in Brittany, he would fairly leave it to the viſcount de Rohan, the lords de Dignan, de Laval, de Léon, de Beaumont, and ſir John de Harpedane, to ſettle the matter between them.

The duke of Brittany, having maturely arranged this in his own mind, without aſking advice from any one of his council, called a ſecretary, to whom, on entering his chamber, he gave a large ſheet of paper, and ſaid, 'Write down as I ſhall dictate.' The ſecretary being ready, the duke repeated to him every word he was to write. The letter was indited in the moſt friendly terms to ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, deſiring him to deviſe ſome means for them to have an interview, when every thing ſhould be ſettled in the moſt agreeable manner.

When the letter was folded up, in the preſence only of the duke and his ſecretary, he ſealed it with his ſignet, and, calling his moſt truſty varlet into the chamber, ſaid,—'Haſten to caſtle Joſſelin,

and ſay boldly that I have ſent thee to ſpeak with my couſin ſir Oliver de Cliſſon. Thou wilt be introduced to him: ſalute him from me: if he return the ſalute, give him this letter, and bring me back his anſwer; but on thy life tell no man, woman or child whither thou art going, nor who has ſent thee.'

The varlet, having promiſed obedience, ſet out, and on his arrival at château-Joſſelin, the guard was greatly ſurpriſed when they heard that the duke of Brittany had ſent him to ſpeak with their lord. Nevertheleſs, they informed ſir Oliver of his coming, who ordered him into his preſence: on his entrance, he delivered his meſſage and the letter. The lord de Cliſſon examined the private ſignet of the duke, which he knew well, opened the letter, and read it two or three times over, and was much aſtoniſhed, during the peruſal, at the affectionate and friendly terms it was written in. After muſing ſome time, he told the varlet he would conſider his anſwer, and ordered him to be conducted to an apartment by himſelf.

The attendants of the lord de Cliſſon were confounded at what they ſaw and heard; for never before had any one come from the duke of Brittany who had not been inſtantly put to death, or confined in the deepeſt dungeon. When ſir Oliver had retired to his chamber, his thoughts were occupied with the contents of the letter, and his hatred to the duke was extinguiſhed, from the ſubmiſſive and affectionate manner in which he had written

written to him: he ſaid to himſelf that he would prove him, and ſee if he were really in earneſt; for he could not venture to go to him merely on the faith of this letter, and, if any accident happened to him, he would be pitied by none.

He determined, therefore, that if the duke would ſend his ſon as an hoſtage, he would come to him when and where he pleaſed, but not otherwiſe. He wrote a very friendly anſwer, and the concluſion was, that if he wiſhed to ſee him, he muſt ſend his ſon as his pledge, who would be taken the greateſt care of until his return. This letter was ſealed and given to the varlet, who haſtened back to the duke at Vannes, where he was impatiently expecting him. On receiving the letter from ſir Oliver, he inſtantly read it: having pauſed a moment, he ſaid, 'I will do it; for, ſince I mean to treat amicably with him, every cauſe of diſtruſt muſt be removed.' He wrote to the viſcount de Rohan, who reſided at his caſtle of Caire, in the neighbourhood of Vannes, to come to him. The viſcount, on the receipt of the duke's letter, waited on him, and he then explained his intentions, by ſaying, 'Viſcount, you and the lord de Monboucher ſhall carry my ſon to château Joſſelin, and bring back with you the lord de Cliſſon, for I am determined to make up our quarrel.' The viſcount replied, that with joy he would obey him.

It was not many days after, that the viſcount de Rohan, the lord de Monboucher and

ſir Yves de Tegré, carried the boy, who might be about ſeven years old, to château Joſſelin, where they were handſomely and honourably received by ſir Oliver de Cliſſon. When he ſaw the boy, and this proof of confidence from the duke, he was much affected. The three knights alſo ſaid, 'You ſee, ſir, how well inclined the duke is to you: he now bears you nothing but the ſincereſt affection.' 'I am at preſent convinced of it,' replied ſir Oliver; 'and, ſince he makes ſuch advances, I will not be behind hand, but put myſelf under his obedience. I know not if to you, who are ſo nearly related to him, and in whom he has ſuch truſt as to confide his ſon and heir, to bring and leave here as an hoſtage until my return, he has told the contents of the letter he ſent me under his private ſignet.'

'Sir,' anſwered the knights, 'he has aſſured us of the earneſt and ſincere deſire he has to make peace with you; and you may believe us, for we are your relations.' 'I firmly do believe you,' ſaid ſir Oliver, as he went out to fetch the duke's letter. Having read it to them, they replied, 'He certainly has ſpoken to us in the very ſame terms in which he has written to you, and in conſequence has ſent us hither.'

'So much the better,' anſwered ſir Oliver.

It was not long after the arrival of the three knights, with the heir of Brittany, before the lord de Cliſſon had made his preparations. They all

all ſet out together from château Joſſelin, carrying the boy with them; for ſir Oliver ſaid he would give him back to his father, as henceforward he ſhould never diſtruſt the duke, after the trial he had made of him. Such generoſity was ſhewn on both ſides, that it was no wonder a firm peace was the conſequence.

They continued their journey to Vannes, where, according to the duke's orders, ſir Oliver diſmounted at a convent of the Dominicans, which is ſituated without the town, where the duke had fixed the meeting to take place. When he heard that the lord de Cliſſon had brought back his ſon, he was highly delighted with his generoſity and courteſy. The duke ſet out from his caſtle of la Motte, for the convent, where he and ſir Oliver ſhut themſelves up in a chamber: having converſed ſome time, they went privately into the garden, and thence to the banks of a river, and entered a ſmall boat that conveyed them to a large veſſel that lay at anchor at the mouth of the river, which they boarded, and, when at a diſtance from their people, continued for a long time in conference.

I cannot pretend to ſay what paſſed between them, but I will relate the conſequences. Their friends thought they were all the time in the convent, when they were on ſhip-board, arranging all things on the footing they wiſhed them to remain. They were upwards of two hours together, if not longer, according to what I heard,

and made a firm peace, which they mutually ſwore to obſerve moſt religiouſly.

When they were about to return, they called their boatman, who rowed them back to the place he had brought them from, and they entered the church by a private door, through the garden and cloiſters of the convent, whence they ſoon departed for the caſtle of la Motte, the duke holding ſir Oliver by the hand. All who thus ſaw them were pleaſed: indeed, the whole of Brittany was very happy when the news of this reconciliation was made public; but greatly were they ſurpriſed on hearing how it had been brought about.

John of Blois, count de Penthievre, was no loſer by this peace: on the contrary, his revenue was augmented twenty thouſand golden crowns of France, well and legally aſſigned to him and his heirs. To confirm and ſtrengthen this peace, a marriage was concluded between the ſon of John of Blois and a daughter of the duke of Brittany; ſo that thoſe who looked for a continuance of war were diſappointed. When intelligence of theſe tranſactions reached France and England, it cauſed very great ſurpriſe*.

You

* When the duke of Brittany and the lord de Cliſſon were reconciled, they named commiſſioners to put their agreement into a legal form; and, according to the hiſtorian of Brittany often quoted, theſe lawyers met at Aucfer, near Redon, the 19th October 1395. The principal articles of the treaty were, that the duke ſhould aſſign over to the count de Penthievre the lordſhips of Châteauneuf du Foſe, Vhelgouet, Gourien, Duault, Châ-

You have before had it related how ſir Peter de Craon incurred the indignation of the king of France and the duke of Touraine, for his attempt to murder the conſtable of France, ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, as he was returning to his hôtel in the night-time from the king's palace; and that, from the duke of Brittany having ſupported and given him an aſylum, the king of France had declared war againſt him, which he would have carried into effect had he not been ſuddenly taken ill between Mans and Angers, when on his march to Brittany: but this melacholy event cauſed the expedition to be put an end to, the army to be diſbanded, and every man to return to his own home.

You have alſo heard how the dukes of Berry and Burgundy took up this buſineſs, and ſhewed great hatred to thoſe who had adviſed the king to this expedition againſt Brittany, ſuch as the lord de

---

Châteaulin in Cornuaille, Lannion and Châteaulin ſur Trieuc, for the yearly payment of eight thouſand livres; that the duke might take back theſe lands when he pleaſed, on giving others of like value in Brittany or France; that the count ſhould pay obedience to the duke, notwithſtanding the demolition of the caſtle of Tonguedoc, the reſtoration of which he could never inſiſt on; that the lord de Cliſſon would acknowledge the duke for his lord, but to have liberty, during four years, to appear perſonally or by proxy; that all lands that had been ſeized by each ſide during the war ſhould be reſtored to their reſpective owners.

This treaty was ſealed and ſworn to by the lord de Cliſſon, at Rieux, the 20th October. The count de Penthievre ſwore to it five days after at Guingamp, in the preſence of the viſcount de Fou and Henri de Juck, chamberlains to the duke.

Cliſſon,

Cliſſon, the lord de la Riviere, ſir John le Mercier Montagu, and others, whom they made ſuffer ſeverely for it; for theſe two dukes had the ſovereign government of the kingdom during the illneſs of the king. You have likewiſe heard of the inveterate war that was carried on between the duke of Brittany and ſir Oliver de Cliſſon, and of their reconciliation; as well as of the deliverance of the lord de la Riviere, ſir John le Mercier, and Montagu, from their confinements. Montagu had not ſo many difficulties to encounter as the other two; for, the inſtant the king recovered his health, he would have Montagu near his perſon, and aſſiſted to make his excuſes for ſeveral charges that had been laid againſt him. You muſt know, however, that this diſorder of the king, and many of the like kind that followed, (for he had ſeveral relapſes, to the great ſorrow and alarm of France,) greatly weakened his power; and his will was ſo little attended to that the three above-named perſons, or two of them at leaſt, very narrowly eſcaped death.

Sir Peter de Craon hearing of the miſerable ſtate of the king and kingdom of France, far from being ſorry, was much rejoiced, and made the ſtrongeſt entreaties that he might be reſtored to the king's favour, and allowed to return to the court of France. His negotiators were the duke of Burgundy and ſir Guy de la Trimouille, who would too eaſily have ſucceeded had not the duke of Orleans ſtrenuouſly oppoſed it. He prevented any treaty being made in favour of ſir Peter de Craon

Craon as long as the war continued between the duke of Brittany and the lord de Cliſſon; but, when they were reconciled, his hatred againſt ſir Peter was much ſoftened.

At this period, the queen of Naples and Jeruſalem, widow of the late duke of Anjou, was proſecuting ſir Peter de Craon in the courts of juſtice at Paris, for the reſtitution of one hundred thouſand francs, a ſum ſhe claimed as due to her late lord; and for that reaſon, and to attend the more to her affairs, ſhe reſided privately in Paris. Sir Peter found himſelf very diſagreeably ſituated: he was fearful of the deciſion of the parliament, for the lady was of great perſonal weight, and had proved from whom, during the life of the duke of Anjou, he had received this ſum, and for which, as ſhe maintained, he had never accounted. He was ill at eaſe on this account, and beſides knew he had incurred the diſgrace of the king and the duke of Orleans. The duke and ducheſs of Burgundy comforted him as well as they could; and he was allowed to come to Paris, privately, where he remained, during the greater part of his reſidence, at the hôtel d'Artois, under the protection of the ducheſs of Burgundy.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

THE KING OF HUNGARY WRITES TO THE KING OF FRANCE HIS SITUATION IN RESPECT TO THE SULTAN BAJAZET.—JOHN OF BURGUNDY, ELDEST SON TO THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY, MARCHES, AS COMMANDER IN CHIEF, AN ARMY TO THE SUCCOUR OF THE HUNGARIANS.

ABOUT this time, Sigiſmond king of Hungary wrote very affectionate letters to the king of France, which he ſent by a biſhop and two of his knights. The contents of theſe letters related to the threats of Bajazet, and his boaſtings to the king of Hungary, of carrying the war into the midſt of his realm, and thence to Rome, where his horſe ſhould eat his oats on the altar of Saint Peter. He ſaid he would eſtabliſh that place for the ſeat of his imperial government, and be attended by the emperor of Conſtantinople and all the principal barons of Greece: each of whom ſhould follow their own laws, for that he would only reſerve to himſelf his authority as their lord paramount. The king of Hungary entreated the king of France to liſten to his diſtreſs; and make it public throughout France and other countries, that all knights and ſquires might be moved to provide themſelves with every neceſſary for a journey to Hungary, to oppoſe the ſultan Bajazet, and prevent holy Chriſtendom from being oppreſſed

preſſed or violated by him, and that his vain boaſtings might be annihilated.

Many affectionate expreſſions were contained in theſe letters, ſuch as kings and couſins are accuſtomed to write to each other in caſes of neceſſity. Thoſe who brought them were men of rank and underſtanding, and acquitted themſelves ſo well, that king Charles was much inclined to their requeſt; and the propoſitions from king Richard for the marriage of his daughter proſpered the more, and were ſooner agreed to, than if this intelligence from Hungary had not arrived in France; for, as king of France and eldeſt ſon of the church, he was very deſirous of providing a remedy for the evils that threatened it.

The ſubject of theſe letters was ſoon made public, both at home and abroad, to move the hearts of gentlemen, knights and ſquires, who were deſirous to travel in ſearch of glory.

At the time this news came to Paris, there were with the king the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, their eldeſt ſon, John of Burgundy count de Nevers, who was not then a knight, ſir Guy and ſir William de la Trimouille, ſir John de Vienne, admiral of France, with other great barons. It was propoſed, therefore, at the hôtel of the duke of Burgundy, who was eager to ſend aſſiſtance to Hungary, that his ſon, the count de Nevers, ſhould undertake an expedition thither, as commander in chief of the French and other chivalry.

John of Burgundy was a courteous and amiable youth

youth of twenty-two years old, greatly beloved by the knights and ſquires of Burgundy, and indeed by all who were acquainted with him. He had married a prudent and devout lady, the daughter of duke Albert of Bavaria, count of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, who had brought him two children, whom, in due ſeaſon, he looked to ally nobly. It was hinted to him, to know what he would ſay, that perhaps the king of France might ſelect him, to lead a body of men at arms to the aſſiſtance of the king of Hungary. He replied, 'that if it were agreeable to his lord the king, and his lord and father, he would cheerfully accept of this command, which came very opportunely, as he had a great deſire to gain renown.' 'Sir,' anſwered thoſe to whom he had addreſſed himſelf, 'ſpeak firſt to your father, and learn whether he be willing that you go, and if he will talk to the king on the ſubject; for without their conſent nothing could be done.'

It was not long after this, that John of Burgundy ſpoke to the duke his father, requeſting humbly his conſent to go on the expedition to Hungary, as he had a ſtrong wiſh for it. When he made this requeſt, there were with the duke ſir Guy and ſir William de la Trimouille, ſir James de Vergy, and other knights, who, taking part in the converſation, ſaid,—'My lord, what John of Burgundy aſks is very reaſonable, for it is time he ſhould receive the order of knighthood; and he cannot more honourably receive it, than when marching againſt the enemies of God and of our

our faith. In caſe the king intend to ſend aſſiſtance to Hungary, whom can he ſo properly appoint as a leader than his couſin-german, your ſon? and you will ſee that many knights will join his company to advance their name.'

The duke replied,—'You ſpeak to the purpoſe, and we have no inclination to check the ardour of our ſon; but we muſt firſt talk to the king, and hear what he ſhall ſay.' The ſubject then dropped; but it was not long before the duke mentioned it to the king, who inſtantly complied, ſaying, he would do well to go thither; and, if he was in earneſt, he not only gave his conſent, but would appoint him commander in chief of the expedition.

It was publiſhed in Paris and elſewhere, that John of Burgundy was to lead a large body of men at arms into Hungary, to oppoſe the force of Bajazet; that, when this was done, he was to advance to Conſtantinople, croſs the Helleſpont, enter Syria, gain the Holy Land, and deliver Jeruſalem and the holy ſepulchre from the hands of the infidels, and the bondage of the ſultan. Knights and ſquires began now to collect together, with other gentlemen who were deſirous of renown. The duke of Burgundy, on the appointment of his ſon to the chief command, paid greater attention than before to the Hungarian ambaſſadors, who, perceiving the good will of the king of France and the nation, were well pleaſed, and took leave of the king, the dukes of Orleans, Berry, Burgundy, the lord Philip d'Artois, count d'Eu

d'Eu and conſtable of France, the count de la Marche and the other barons, on their departure for their own country, where the king of Hungary was greatly delighted with the news they brought. In conſequence of this, he gave orders for large ſtores of proviſion to be provided againſt the arrival of the French; and ſent meſſengers to his brother, the king of Germany, and his couſin, the duke of Auſtria, for all the paſſes in their territories to be thrown open, as it would be neceſſary for them to march that way: he likewiſe ordered plenty of proviſion to be ready prepared, on the road they were to come. He ſent alſo information of the expected aſſiſtance from France to the great maſter of the Teutonic order, and to the knights of Rhodes, that they might be ready to meet John of Burgundy, who, in the courſe of this ſummer, would lead a thouſand knights and ſquires, all men of valour, into Hungary, on their way to Turkey, to oppoſe the menaces of the ſultan Bajazet.

While the news of this expedition was the matter of converſation every where, the lord de Coucy returned from the frontiers of Genoa, where he had been upwards of a year negotiating with the Genoeſe. Some of the leading men in that city had informed the duke of Orleans that perſons compoſing the government of Genoa were deſirous of having for their duke one of the blood-royal of France, and, as he had married the daughter of the duke of Milan, it would be very ſuitable for him.

In

In conſequence of this, the lord de Coucy had paſſed through Savoy and Piedmont, with the conſent of the count de Savoye and the Savoyards, accompanied by three hundred lances and five hundred croſs-bows. Having obtained leave from the duke of Milan, he continued his journey from Aſti in Piedmont to a town called Alexandria, and thence to the frontiers of Genoa, to enter into negotiations with the Genoeſe, and learn more plainly their intentions. By force he could do nothing, unleſs he were very ſuperior to the Genoeſe, which was not the caſe.

When the lord de Coucy had entered the territories of Genoa, which are not eaſy to conquer, if the inhabitants have any diſpoſition to defend them, ſome of thoſe lords who had ſent the information to the duke of Orleans, and had been the cauſe of his coming, waited on him, and with many friendly expreſſions welcomed him to their country and offered him their caſtles. But the lord de Coucy was as prudent as valiant, and being well acquainted with the character of the Lombards and Genoeſe, was unwilling to truſt too much to their offers and promiſes. However, he received them kindly, and treated them fairly by words; for although there were many conferences between them, they were held in the open fields, and not in any houſe or caſtle; but the more he negotiated the leſs he gained.

The Genoeſe ſhewed him every token of affection, and invited him repeatedly to come to Genoa, or to Porto Venere, but the lord de Coucy

would never put himſelf in their power. The iſſue of his negotiation was unſucceſsful; and when it was found he could not do any thing, having regularly written to the duke of Orleans reſpecting the ſtate of affairs, he was remanded to Paris, at the time when the expedition to Hungary was in agitation.

The duke and ducheſs of Burgundy were happy at his return, and, ſending for him to the hôtel d'Artois, addreſſed him in the moſt amiciable manner as follows:

'Lord de Coucy, we have the higheſt opinion of your underſtanding, valour and prudence; and as we have made John our ſon and heir undertake the command of an expedition, which we hope will turn out to the honour of God and Chriſtendom, knowing that you of all the knights of France are the beſt informed of warlike affairs, we beg and entreat moſt earneſtly that you would be the counſellor and companion of our ſon in this expedition; for which we ſhall be ſo greatly obliged, that we will return it by ſerving you or yours to the utmoſt of our power.'

The lord de Coucy replied,—'My lord, and you Madam, what you requeſt is to me an order. I will ſurely be of this expedition, if it pleaſe God, for two reaſons: firſt, from devotion, and to defend the faith of Jesus Christ; ſecondly, from the honour you do me, by giving me the charge of adviſing my lord John your ſon. I ſhall therefore obey, and acquit myſelf in all reſpects to the beſt of my abilities. But, my

my dear lord, and you my very dear lady, you may readily excuſe me from this weight, and lay it on the lord Philip d'Artois, conſtable of France, and on the count de la Marche; for they are nearly related to him, and intend to form a part of the expedition.'

The duke anſwered,—'Lord de Coucy, you have ſeen much more than either of them, and know more of war than our couſins of Eu and de la Marche; and we entreat you to comply with our requeſt.'

'My lord,' ſaid the lord de Coucy, 'your words are commands; and I will do as you require, ſince it is your pleaſure, with the aid of ſir Guy de la Trimouille, his brother ſir William, and ſir John de Vienne admiral of France.'

The duke and ducheſs were well pleaſed with this anſwer.

The lords of France made vaſt preparations for their expedition to Hungary, and ſolicited the company and ſervice of different barons, knights and ſquires. Such as were not aſked, and had a wiſh to go thither, made application to the count d'Eu, conſtable of France, the count de la Marche or the lord de Coucy, that they would take them in their company. Some were accepted: but thoſe who were not, conſidering the great diſtance Hungary and Turkey were from France, greatly cooled in their ardour; for, as they were not retained, they were not ſufficiently wealthy to perform the journey with credit to themſelves.

Nothing was ſpared in the preparations for the young John of Burgundy with regard to horſes, armour, emblazonments, dreſſes, ſilver and gold plate, and the duke's officers were fully employed in the buſineſs. Large ſums of florins were given to the ſervants of John of Burgundy, who paid them to the different workmen as they finiſhed and brought home their works. The barons, knights and ſquires, to do him honour, exerted themſelves to make their equipments as handſome as poſſible.

The lord Philip d'Artois, count d'Eu, made magnificent preparations; for he was determined to march thither as conſtable of France; and the king, who much loved him, aſſiſted him with money, and he acted in the ſame manner with reſpect to the lord Boucicaut, marſhal of France. The duke of Burgundy, conſidering that this expedition would coſt him very large ſums, and that the ſtate of his wife, himſelf and his ſon Anthony, ought not to be any way diminiſhed, bethought himſelf of a tax he had in reſerve, in order to find a ſupply of money for theſe expenſes. He had received from cities and towns in Burgundy, as the uſual tax on his eldeſt ſon receiving the order of knighthood, ſix ſcore thouſand golden crowns: but his additional tax was laid on all knights who held fiefs from him, to attend his ſon into Hungary, or compound in money. Some were taxed at one thouſand livres, others at two thouſand; ſome at five hundred; each according to his wealth,

wealth, or the value of the lands. Ladies and ancient knights, who were unfit or diſabled to undertake ſuch an expedition, paid compoſitions at the duke's pleaſure. The young knights and ſquires were exempted paying, for they were told,—'My lord does not want your money: you muſt accompany the lord John at your own coſts and charges.' Of this laſt tax, the duke of Burgundy received from the gentlemen of his duchy ſixty thouſand crowns, for none were exempted.

CHAP. XXX.

THE COUNT D'OSTREVANT, BROTHER-IN-LAW TO JOHN OF BURGUNDY, BEING DESIROUS TO MARCH TO HUNGARY, IS ADVISED BY HIS FATHER TO ATTEMPT, IN PREFERENCE, THE RE-CONQUEST OF FRIESLAND, WHICH BELONGED TO THEM.

NEWS of this expedition to Hungary was ſpread far and near. On its being announced in Hainault, knights and ſquires, eager for renown, aſſembled together, and ſaid,—'It would not be amiſs if our lord of Hainault, who is young and promiſing, were to accompany his brother-in-law, the count de Nevers, in this expedition; and, ſhould it take place, we muſt not fail to attend him.'

The count d'Oſtrevant reſided in Queſnoy at the time ſuch converſations were held, and was informed what his knights and ſquires ſaid. This made him the more willing to accompany his brother-in-law, having before had ſuch intentions. Whenever the ſubject was mentioned in his preſence, he diſſembled his real thoughts, by ſaying little about it, meaning to conſult his lord and father, duke Albert of Bavaria, count of Hainault, how he would adviſe him to act.

It was not many days before he ſet out to viſit the duke and ducheſs of Bavaria at the Hague, where they lived. He addreſſed his father,—'My lord, it is currently reported that my brother-in-law of Nevers has undertaken an expedition to Hungary, and thence to Turkey, againſt the ſultan Bajazet. There muſt be grand deeds of arms performed; and at this moment I am perfectly idle, knowing not whither to bear arms: I wiſh to learn your intentions, if it would be agreeable to you that I ſhould accompany my brother-in-law on this honourable expedition, with one hundred of our chivalry. My lord and lady of Burgundy will thank me for ſo doing; and there are many knights and ſquires in Hainault who will eagerly go with me.'

Duke Albert replied, like one who had well weighed the ſubject,—'William, ſince thou haſt to great a deſire to travel, and to ſeek for deeds of arms in Hungary and Turkey, againſt a people and country who have never done us any wrong, it muſt be cauſed by vainglory alone, for thou haſt

not

not a ſhadow of reaſon to induce thee to go thither. Let John of Burgundy and our couſins of France perform their enterpriſe, and do thou undertake one that more nearly touches us. March to Frieſland, and conquer back that country, which was our inheritance; for the Frieſlanders have, by rebellion, withdrawn themſelves from our obedience; and, if thou undertake this, I will aſſiſt thee.' This ſpeech from his father was very agreeable to the count d'Oſtrevant, and raiſed his ſpirit: he anſwered, 'My lord, you ſay well; and, if it be your opinion I ſhould undertake ſuch an expedition, I will do ſo heartily.' By little and little, the matter was ſo long talked over betwee. the father and ſon, that the invaſion of Frieſland was agreed upon; and a circumſtance I ſhall relate greatly helped him in this matter.

The count d'Oſtrevant had at that time, for his principal adviſer, a ſquire of Hainault, called Fierabras, or the baſtard of Vertain. He was equal in prudence as in arms, ſo that when the count told him what his father had ſaid, he replied,—'Sir, my lord your father gives you excellent advice. It will be more for your honour to undertake this expedition than to join that to Hungary; and, when you begin your preparations for it, you will find plenty of knights and ſquires in Hainault and elſewhere, ready to accompany and aſſiſt you. But if you really are in earneſt to undertake it, I would recommend that you firſt go to England, to make known your intentions to the knights and ſquires of that country; and to

entreat the king of England, your couſin, that he would permit you to retain knights, ſquires and archers, and allow them to accept of your pay, and to accompany you from England. The Engliſh are men of valour: if you ſucceed in obtaining their aſſiſtance, you will go far to be ſucceſsful; and if you can prevail on your couſin, the earl of Derby, to take part and come with you, there will be ſtill greater chances of ſucceſs, and your enterpriſe will gain more renown.'

The count d'Oſtrevant inclined to the council of Fierabras de Vertain, for he thought it good; and, when he ſpoke of it to the lord de Gomegines, he likewiſe agreed to it, as did all who were friends to the count. News of this was whiſpered throughout Hainault, and a proclamation ſoon after iſſued, to prohibit all knights and ſquires from quitting the country, to form part of any expedition to Hungary or elſewhere, for that the count d'Oſtrevant needed their ſervices, and would, this ſummer, lead them againſt Frieſland.

We will, for a while, leave this matter, and ſpeak of others that were in greater forwardneſs.

CHAP. XXXI.

JOHN OF BURGUNDY, COUNT OF NEVERS, LEADS AN ARMY INTO HUNGARY AGAINST THE TURKS.—THE NEGOTIATIONS FOR THE MARRIAGE OF KING RICHARD OF ENGLAND WITH THE ELDEST PRINCESS OF FRANCE ARE CONTINUED.

THE knights and ſquires in different countries were all alive at the wars that ſeemed likely to take place in oppoſite quarters: ſome made themſelves ready for the exdipetion to Hungary; others for that to Frieſland: and whenever they met they converſed on theſe ſubjects.

The count de Nevers was prepared; and all thoſe knights had been enrolled who were to be under his charges, and to accompany him. The purveyances were very conſiderable and well arranged; and, as the honour of the expedition was given to him, he made handſome preſents to his knights and ſquires, and gave them many ſtores; for, as the journey was long and expenſive, it was but proper the men at arms ſhould be aided to ſupport them. In like manner did other lords act; ſuch as the conſtable of France, the count de la Marche, the lords Philip and Henry de Bar, the lord de Coucy, ſir Guy de la Trimouille, ſir John de Vienne admiral of France, Boucicaut marſhal of France, ſir Reginald de Roye, the lords

lords de Saint Pol, de Montmorel, de Saint Py, the haze de Flanders, ſir Louis de Brézé, his brother, and the borgne de Monquel, with many more; for they amounted to one thouſand knights and as many ſquires, all men of tried courage and enterprize.

They left their homes about the middle of March, and advanced in good array by companies. They found all the roads open to them, for the king of Germany had commanded that his country and Bohemia ſhould afford them every friendly aſſiſtance to ſupply their wants, and that the prices of proviſion ſhould on no account be raiſed.

Thus did theſe lords of France march to the aſſiſtance of the king of Hungary, whoſe army was to have a pitched battle againſt that of Bajazet, on the 20th day of the enſuing month of May. They paſſed Lorraine, the counties of Bar and Montbelliard, the duchy of Burgundy, and, entering Auſſais, traverſed that whole country, and, having croſſed the Rhine in many places, marched through the county of Ferrette, and entered Auſtria.—This is an extenſive and wild country, with difficult paſſes; but they advanced with ſo good an inclination, that they did not ſuffer from the labour and fatigue. The chief converſation of the French lords was concerning the power of the Turks, which they ſeemed to make very light of.

The duke of Auſtria gave the French lords a handſome reception; but he was particularly attentive

tentive to John of Burgundy, for the lord Otho, eldeſt ſon to the duke, had eſpouſed Mary of Burgundy, his ſiſter. All theſe French lords were to aſſemble at a city called Buda, in Hungery. Let us return to the affairs of France.

You have before heard that the king of England had ſent as ambaſſadors to the king of France, to conclude a marriage between him and his eldeſt daughter Iſabella, the archbiſhop of Dublin, the biſhop of St. David's, the earl marſhal, the earl of Rutland, ſon to the duke of York, ſir Henry Clifford, the lord Beaumont, the lord Deſpencer, ſir John de Roberſat, and ſeveral more. They had ſucceeded well in the buſineſs, and the French king made them welcome, as did his uncles and council. The ambaſſadors returned to England in high ſpirits, and gave the king great hopes that his wiſhes would be gratified.

King Richard was not idle in the buſineſs, but during the following winter, frequently reminded the king and council of France of it, who were far from being adverſe, for they conſidered it as one of the ſureſt means to put an end to the wars which had laſted ſo long between France and England. The treaty was carried on with eagerneſs and friendſhip on both ſides; and the king of England promiſed, from the power he had over his ſubjects, that there ſhould be peace between the two countries. To conclude the buſineſs, the earl of Rutland and the earl marſhal, with the other ambaſſadors, were again ſent to Paris. They were lodged at the Croix du Tiroir, and, with

their

their attendants, occupied the whole of that ſtreet, and part of another: they were full ſix hundred, and remained in Paris upwards of three weeks, ſupplied with every thing from the king of France.

CHAP. XXXII.

THE QUEEN OF NAPLES, WIDOW TO THE LATE DUKE OF ANJOU, OBTAINS JUDGMENT IN PARLIAMENT AGAINST SIR PETER DE CRAON.

DURING the time theſe ambaſſadors were at Paris negotiating the marriage of the king of England, the dowager queen of Naples was alſo there, buſily employed in her own concerns, for ſhe was a lady of great activity. Her buſineſs at that time was before the parliament, where ſhe was pleading two cauſes: one for the inheritance of the county of Rouſſy againſt the count de Brianne; for the late duke of Anjou, her lord, had bought and paid for it to a lady who was counteſs de Rouſſy, ſome time wife to ſir Louis de Namur, from whom ſhe was divorced.

The other was againſt ſir Peter de Craon, from whom ſhe claimed the ſum of one hundred thouſand francs, and which ſhe proved he had received for and in the name of her late lord the king of Naples,

Naples, Sicily and Jeruſalem, on condition to pay the ſame to him in la Puglia; but, when he was informed of the king of Naples' death, he no longer continued his journey but returned to France, making uſe of the above-mentioned ſum to his own profit, without rendering any account of it to the queen of Naples, nor to her two children Lewis and Charles, but diſſipating it in folly and extravagance. This was the cauſe, as the queen of Naples ſaid, of the loſs of that kingdom, which was regained by Margaret Durazzo and the heirs of ſir Charles Durazzo; for the ſoldiers of her late lord, who were aiding her to continue the war in Calabria and la Puglia, deſerted her for want of pay: many had turned to the count de St. Severino and to Margaret Durazzo, and others had retired from the war.

All theſe matters were pleaded in the courts of the parliament at Paris for upwards of three years: although ſir Peter de Craon was abſent, his advocates defended him well. They ſaid, that in regard to the ſum of one hundred thouſand francs which he was charged with having received in the name of the king of Naples, that king was indebted to him as much, if not more, for the great and noble ſervices he had rendered him.

Notwithſtanding the length of time this cauſe laſted, it was impoſſible to put off for ever its concluſion; and the lady was very urgent that judgment ſhould be given by the parliament.

The judges, having conſidered the matter well, declared they would give no judgment until both

parties

parties were perſonally before them. This was then difficult to accompliſh, from the diſgrace ſir Peter de Craon was in with the king and the duke of Orleans, for his attempt to aſſaſſinate the conſtable. The lady, finding nothing would be done until ſir Peter was before the court, perfectly free from every other charge except what ſhe accuſed him of, and with full liberty to go any where in France, exerted herſelf greatly to obtain this for him, that an end might be put to her ſuit. Her ſolicitations with the king, the duke of Orleans, the count de Penthievre, ſir John Harpedane and others, who had any complaints againſt him, were ſucceſsful, and he was acquitted of all other charges. I know not whether it happened through diſſimulation or otherwiſe, but he was ſhewn great attention and kindneſs by the nobles and ladies of France until the time when judgment was to be given. He kept up as great ſtate at Paris as ever he had done, and was appointed to receive the Engliſh ambaſſadors, and to introduce them to the king, his brother and uncles, for he was a knight perfectly well verſed in all ſuch ceremonies.

The day was fixed for the parliament to decide on the queen of Naples' complaints: the ſentence had before been determined upon, and waited ſolely for the appearance of all parties concerned. A great number of the nobility attended, that it might have more authenticity; among whom were the queen of Sicily and Jerualem, ducheſs of Anjou and counteſs of Provence, her ſon Charles,

prince

prince of Tarentum, and John of Blois, more commonly called John of Brittany, count de Penthievre and Limoges, the dukes of Orleans, Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon, the count de Brianne and the biſhop of Laon, whom the queen had brought before the court on the ſubject of her claim on the county of Rouſſy. Sir Peter de Craon was likewiſe there, attended by many of his relations and friends.

The matter of the county of Rouſſy was firſt diſpoſed of; and the judgment of the court was ſolemnly pronounced, that the county ſhould belong to the count de Brianne and to his heirs, who was to have immediate poſſeſſion given him; but the queen of Naples was to be repaid in money the full amount of what her late lord, the duke of Anjou, had given to the counteſs of Rouſſy, lately deceaſed. The heirs of the counteſs of Rouſſy, to whom the lands belonged, thanked the court for the judgment they had given.

The preſident, who was to declare the ſentence in the ſecond cauſe, now roſe, and ſaid, 'the parliament had determined that ſir Peter de Craon was indebted to the queen of Naples in the ſum of one hundred thouſand francs, which he muſt pay to her, or be committed to priſon until it was done completely to her ſatisfaction.' The queen thanked the court for their judgment, and, inſtantly, on her requeſt, ſir Peter de Craon was arreſted, in the king's name, and carried to the priſon of the Louvre, where he was confined and well guarded.

Upon

Upon this, the parliament broke up, and every one returned to his home. Thus were theſe two ſentences given, through the activity of the ducheſs of Anjou.

CHAP. XXXIII.

THE MARRIAGE IS CONCLUDED BETWEEN KING RICHARD OF ENGLAND AND THE LADY ISABELLA, ELDEST DAUGHTER TO CHARLES VI. KING OF FRANCE.—THE DUKE OF LANCASTER MARRIES AGAIN.—SIR PETER DE CRAON IS, AFTER SOME TIME, DELIVERED FROM PRISON, AT THE ENTREATY OF THE YOUNG QUEEN OF ENGLAND.

THE earl marſhal, the earl of Rutland, and the Engliſh ambaſſadors remained for twenty-two days in Paris, where they were excellently well entertained by the king and his court: their negotiations were ſucceſsful, and the marriage between the king of England and the princeſs Iſabella was agreed on. She was betrothed and eſpouſed by the earl marſhal, as proxy for the king of England, and the lady, ever after, was ſtiled queen of England. I was at the time told it was pleaſant to ſee that, young as ſhe was, ſhe knew well how to act the queen.

When this buſineſs was completed, and the different

ferent treaties ſigned and ſealed, the ambaſſadors took their leave of the king and his court, and departed from Paris to Calais, on their return to England, where they were joyfully received by the king, the duke of Lancaſter, and the lords attached to the king's perſon and pleaſures.

However much others might be pleaſed, it was not ſo with the duke of Gloceſter; for he ſaw plainly that by this marriage peace would be eſtabliſhed between the two kingdoms, which ſorely diſpleaſed him, unleſs it ſhould be ſuch a peace as would redound to the honour of England, and every thing were placed on the ſame footing as when the war broke out in Gaſcony. He frequently converſed on this ſubject with his brother the duke of York, and, whenever the occaſion was favourable, endeavoured to draw him over to his way of thinking, for he was but of weak underſtanding. He dared not ſpeak ſo freely to his elder brother of Lancaſter, who was of the king's party, and well ſatisfied with this marriage, on account of his two daughters the queens of Caſtille and Portugal.

At this period, the duke of Lancaſter married his third wife, the daughter of a Hainault knight, called ſir Paon de Ruet: he had formerly been one of the knights to the good and noble queen Philippa of England, who much loved the Hainaulters, as ſhe was herſelf of that country.

This lady whom the duke of Lancaſter married was called Catherine, and in her youth had been of the houſehold of the ducheſs Blanche of Lancaſter.

After the lady Blanche's death, and the duke married the daughter of don Pedro, he ſtill cohabited with the lady Catherine de Ruet, who was then married to an Engliſh knight now dead*.

The duke of Lancaſter had three children† by her, previous to his marriage, two ſons and a daughter: the eldeſt ſon was named John lord Beaufort of Lancaſter; the other Thomas, whom the duke kept at the ſchools in Oxford, and made a great churchman and civilian. He was afterward biſhop of Lincoln, which is the richeſt biſhoprick in the kingdom: from affection to theſe children, the duke married their mother, to the great aſtoniſhment of France and England, for Catherine Swineford was of baſe extraction in compariſon to his two former ducheſſes Blanche and Conſtance.

When this marriage was announced to the ladies of high rank in England, ſuch as the ducheſs of Gloceſter, the counteſs of Derby, the counteſs of Arundel, and others connected with the royal family, they were greatly ſhocked, and thought the duke much to blame. They ſaid, 'he had ſadly diſgraced himſelf by thus marrying his concubine,' and added, that, 'ſince it was ſo, ſhe would be the

* Sir Hugh Swineford.

† Froiſſart miſtakes in the number, and Thomas for Henry. According to Sandford, he had four children by Catherine Swineford:—John Beaufort, earl of Somerſet,—Henry Beaufort, biſhop of Wincheſter and cardinal of Beaufort,—Thomas Beaufort, duke of Exeter and earl of Dorſet,—Joan Beaufort, counteſs of Weſtmoreland.

For further particulars, ſee Sandford and Dugdale.

ſecond

ſecond lady in the kingdom, and the queen would be diſhonourably accompanied by her; but that, for their parts, they would leave her to do the honours alone, for they would never enter any place where ſhe was. They themſelves would be diſgraced if they ſuffered ſuch a baſe-born ducheſs, who had been the duke's concubine a long time before and during his marriages, to take precedence, and their hearts would burſt with grief were it to happen.'

Thoſe who were the moſt outrageous on the ſubject were the duke and ducheſs of Gloceſter. They conſidered the duke of Lancaſter as a doating fool for thus marrying his concubine, and declared they would never honour his lady by calling her ſiſter. The duke of York made light of the matter, for he lived chiefly with the king and his brother of Lancaſter. The duke of Gloceſter was of a different way of thinking: although the youngeſt of the three brothers, he yielded to no man's opinion, was naturally very proud and overbearing, and in oppoſition to the king's miniſters, unleſs he could turn them as he willed.

Catherine Ruet, however, remained ducheſs of Lancaſter, and the ſecond lady in England, as long as ſhe lived. She was a lady accuſtomed to honours, for ſhe had been brought up at court during her youth, and the duke fondly loved the children he had by her, as he ſhewed during his life and at his death.

I muſt mention, that when the ſentence of the court of parliament at Paris had been pronounced

againſt ſir Peter de Craon in favour of the queen of Naples, he was confounded. Finding that he muſt refund the one hundred thouſand francs or remain his whole life in priſon, he liſtened to the counſel that was given him from the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy. They adviſed him to ſolicit the young queen of England to intercede with the queen of Naples to obtain his liberty for fifteen days only, that he might ſeek out his friends in Paris to pay this money, or to become his ſureties until he had procured it in Brittany or elſewhere, engaging to return with the ſum he was condemned to pay.

The queen of Naples complied with the requeſt of the queen of England, but on condition that ſir Peter de Craon ſhould every night ſleep in his priſon at the Louvre. Sir Peter ſought for aid among his relatives in vain; for the ſum was too great for them to advance, and they refuſed being his ſureties. At the end of the fifteen days, he was forced to return to his priſon, where he was ſtrictly guarded day and night, and at his own proper coſts.

We will now ſpeak of what actions and enterpriſes the count de Nevers and the lords of France performed this ſummer in Hungary; and then ſay ſomething of the expedition the earl of Hainault and earl of Oſtrevant made into Frieſland.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIV.

JOHN OF BURGUNDY, COUNT OF NEVERS, PASSES THE DANUBE WITH HIS ARMY.—AFTER THE CAPTURE OF SEVERAL PLACES, THE TOWN OF NICOPOLI IS BESIEGED*.

ON the arrival of the count de Nevers with his army, which was compoſed of numbers of valiant men from France and other countries, at Buda in Hungary, the king gave them a moſt hearty reception, as indeed he ought, for to ſerve him were they come. It was the intention of the king of Hungary, before he took the field, to obtain ſome certain intelligence of the movements of Bajazet; for he had given him notice ſince laſt February to increaſe his forces, as he would in the courſe of the month of May lead an immenſe army to croſs the Danube and offer combat to the Hungarians.

Many wondered how this could be done; but others replied,—'nothing was impoſſible to man; that as Bajazet was of great valour and enterpriſe, and had ſaid he would do ſo, he would ſurely accompliſh it; but, if he failed in his threat, and did

* Nicopoli,—on the Danube, in Bulgaria, ſixty leagues N. W. from Adrianople. It is famous for the battle, in 1393, between Sigiſmond king of Hungary and Bajazet. Sigiſmond loſt the battle and twenty thouſand men; but it coſt Bajazet ſixty thouſand, who were left dead on the field.

not croſs the Danube, we ought to croſs it, and enter his kingdom of Turkey. The king of Hungary could lead thither one hundred thouſand men, including foreigners, which was ſufficient to conquer all Turkey, and even to advance to the kingdom of Perſia. If we gain a victory over Bajazet, we ſhall ſo far ſucceed, that we may conquer Syria and the Holy Land, and deliver Jeruſalem out of the hands of the Sultan and the enemies of our God. In the enſuing ſummer, the kings of France and England will jointly raiſe a large force of men at arms and archers; and, when they ſhall be united to us, nothing will be able to withſtand ſo powerful an army.'

Such were the converſations of the French in Hungary. When the month of May arrived, being diſappointed in their expectations of hearing of the march of Bajazet, the king of Hungary ſent ſcouts acroſs the Danube to ſeek intelligence, and, at the ſame time, iſſued his ſummons for his power to aſſemble. The knights of Rhodes came thither in numbers during the month of May, looking for the arrival of the Saracens, but no news was heard of them. The king of Hungary, on this, ſent ſome Hungarians, who were uſed to arms, and well acquainted with the country, beyond the Danube, but they were as unſucceſsful as his former ſcouts, in not meeting Bajazet: they heard that he was ſtill in Aſia, at Damaſcus, Antioch or Alexandria.

The king, on receiving this information, called a council of his lords, and thoſe who were come from

from France, who were eager to ſignalize themſelves, to conſider how they ſhould act in this emergency. The king told them that he had ſent ſome expert men at arms to ſeek Bajazet, who had advanced far into Turkey; and that there was no appearance Bajazet would this ſummer put the menace into execution, of croſſing the Danube to offer him battle. The king wiſhed to have advice on this matter, more eſpecially from the French lords.

The lord de Coucy having conſulted with the other barons, anſwered for them, that if Bajazet ſhould have told lies, and deceived them by not keeping his word, they ought not for that to remain idle, but attempt ſome deeds of arms, ſince they were come thither to that effect; that all the French, Germans and other foreigners, were willing to meet the Turks; and if under the command of Bajazet ſo much the better, as it would redound more to their honour. What the lord de Coucy ſaid was approved of by the French, Germans, Bohemians and others, as the moſt advantageous manner of employing the ſeaſon.

Orders were, in conſequence, iſſued by the king and marſhals, that every one be prepared by a certain day, which was appointed on the octave of Saint John the Baptiſt, to march for Turkey. Theſe orders were punctually obeyed; and you would have ſeen ſervants buſily employed in preparing all things for their maſters' wants.

The lords of France were deſirous of making a handſome figure, and examined well their armour

and equipages, ſparing no money to have them as complete as poſſible. Their appearance was grandly magnificent, when they took the field from Buda, the principal city of Hungary. The conſtable of Hungary had the command of the van diviſion, becauſe he knew the country well, and led with him a large body of Hungarians and Germans. Next to him marched the French lords, the conſtable of France, the count de la Marche, the lord de Coucy, the lords Henry and Philip de Bar, and many more.

With the king of Hungary rode the greateſt barons of his realm, as was proper, and by his ſide John of Burgundy, who often converſed with him. They were full ſixty thouſand horſe: the infantry were few in number, indeed none but the followers of the army. The array of the Chriſtians was noble and handſome; and among the Hungarians were many croſs-bow men on horſeback. This army advanced until it came to the banks of the Danube, which it croſſed in barges, boats and pontoons, prepared ſome time ſince for this purpoſe. It was more than eight days before all had paſſed over; and as they landed on the oppoſite ſhore, they lodged themſelves to wait for their companions.

The Danube divides the kingdoms of Hungary and Turkey. When the whole army had croſſed, they were delighted to find themſelves on Turkiſh ground, for they were impatient to try the courage of the Turks. After a council, they reſolved to beſiege a Town in Turkey called Comeſte*, and

* Comeſte. Q. Niſſa

made

made preparations to inveſt it on all ſides. This could eaſily be done; for it is ſituated in an open plain, with a river deep enough to bear veſſels, called the Mecte*, which riſes in Turkey, and falls into the Danube near the ſea. This river Danube is very wide, and has more than four hundred leagues of courſe from its ſpring to the ſea: it would be the moſt profitable of rivers to Hungary and the adjoining countries, if the veſſels it carries could have a free paſſage to the ſea, but that is impoſſible; for, right at its mouth, there is a mountain which divides it into two parts, and chokes the paſſage: the noiſe of the water is ſo tremendous, no veſſel dares approach it, and it may be heard ſeven leagues off.

On both ſides of the river Mecte are fertile meads, to the great advantage of the inhabitants, and vineyards, which in favourable ſeaſons produce good wines. The Turks vintage them, and, when made, they are put into goat ſkins, and ſold to the Chriſtians, for, according to their religion, they are forbidden to taſte wine under pain of death; at leaſt when diſcovered ſo doing, they are puniſhed: they make pleaſant beverages of many other excellent fruits and ſpices, and are accuſtomed to drink much of goat's milk, during the hot weather, to refreſh and cool them.

The king of Hungary encamped his army before this town without oppoſition, for no one made any attempt to prevent the ſiege; nor was there

* Mecte. Q. Morava.

any

any perſon or army in the place, from Bajazet, to guard or defend it. On their arrival, they found the fruits ripe, which was a great comfort to them. Many attacks were made on the town, but they were valiantly oppoſed by the inhabitants, in the expectation of daily receiving reinforcements from Bajazet, their lord, to raiſe the ſiege. None however came, and the city was taken by ſtorm, with great ſlaughter of men, women and children, for the Chriſtians on entering it ſpared none.

When Comecte had thus been deſtroyed, the king of Hungary decamped with his army, and advanced farther into Turkey towards the large city of Nicopoli; but, before he arrived there, he came to a town called Laquaire, where he encamped fifteen days, for it was ſo long before he could conquer it. This was alſo taken by ſtorm, and deſtroyed. They then marched to another town and caſtle called Brehappe, governed by a Turkiſh knight, the lord of the place, who had with him a ſtrong garriſon.

The king of Hungary encamped his Hungarians about a league diſtant from it on account of water, for there was none nearer Brehappe; but the counts de Nevers, d'Eu, de la Marche, and the lords de Coucy, Boucicaut, de Saimpi, de Roye, Henry and Philip de Bar, with more than a thouſand French knights and ſquires, made their approaches cloſe to the town. The count de Nevers had been created a knight by the king of Hungary, on his entering Turkey; and, the day he diſplayed his banner, upwards of three hundred

were

were knighted. Thoſe who had advanced to the town won it, within four days, by aſſault; but the caſtle was too ſtrong, and reſiſted all their attacks. The lord of Brehappe, whoſe name was, I believe, Corbadas, a very valiant man, ſaved many of his people within the caſtle. He had three brothers, called Maladius, Balachius and Ruffin.

After the capture of the town, the Chriſtians were ſeven days before the caſtle, and attacked it many times, but they loſt more than they gained.

Theſe four brothers ſhewed they were men of valour by the defence they made. The French lords having well conſidered the ſtrength of the caſtle, and that they loſt more than they won, ſaw plainly their attempts would be vain, and decamped, for they had heard the king of Hungary was deſirous to lay ſiege to Nicopoli. Thus was the ſiege of Brehappe-caſtle broken up, and the garriſon left in peace, but the town was burnt. The count de Nevers and the lords of France joined the king of Hungary, who inſtantly prepared to march to Nicopoli.

Corbadas de Brehappe was well pleaſed to obſerve the Chriſtians marching away, and ſaid,—'We ſhall now be undiſturbed for ſome time: if my town be burnt, it will be rebuilt and recover itſelf: but I am ſurpriſed that we have no news from our ſultan Bajazet; for he told me, the laſt time I ſpoke with him in the city of Nicopoli, that he would return to this country the beginning of May.

May. His intentions were to croſs the Helleſpont, and march to Hungary to offer battle to the Chriſtians, as he had ſent to inform the king of Hungary. But this he has not done; and the Hungarians, greatly ſtrengthened and emboldened by ſuccours from France, have croſſed the Danube and entered Turkey, where they will deſtroy all the poſſeſſions of Bajazet, for we have no force to oppoſe them. They will now for certain beſiege Nicopoli, which, although ſufficiently ſtrong to hold out for ſome time, muſt be well defended. We are four brothers, knights, and relations to Bajazet: we ought, therefore, to attend to his concerns; and, in conſequence, I propoſe the following plan: I and my brother Maladius will go to Nicopoli to aſſiſt in its defence; Balachius ſhall remain here to guard Brehappe, and Ruffin ſhall croſs the ſea and haſten to find Bajazet, and inform him of every thing that has happened, and the great army that has invaded Turkey, that he may take inſtant meaſures to prevent the diſhonourable loſs of his poſſeſſions, and march ſuch a force againſt the Chriſtians as may conquer them; otherwiſe he will not only loſe Armenia that he has won, but his own territories alſo; for, according to appearances, the king of Hungary and the Chriſtians are determined to attempt his complete deſtruction.'

The three Turks approved of what their brother had ſaid, and promiſed obedience. They made preparations accordingly; and, in the meantime, the ſiege was laid before Nicopoli by the Chriſtians

Chriſtian army, amounting to nearly one hundred thouſand men. Corbadas de Brehappe and his brother Maladius gained admittance into the town, to the joy of the inhabitants.

Balachius remained in the caſtle of Brehappe, and Ruffin took the firſt opportunity of ſetting out, paſſing the Chriſtian army in the night, for he was well acquainted with the country, and croſſed the Helleſpont to learn intelligence where Bajazet was.

In truth, Bajazet was at Cairo with the ſultan of Babylon, to ſolicit his aid, and there the Turk found him. When Bajazet ſaw him, he was much ſurpriſed, and imagined ſomething extraordinary had happened. He called to him, and aſked how things were going on in Turkey.

'My lord,' replied he, 'they are very anxious to ſee you there, for the king of Hungary, with an immenſe force, has croſſed the Danube, and invaded the country. They have commited great deſtruction, and burnt five or ſix of your incloſed towns: when I left Brehappe, they were marching to Nicopoli. My brothers Corbadas and Maladius have thrown themſelves, with ſome men at arms, into the town to aſſiſt in the defence. You muſt know, that in this army of the king of Hungary, there is a body of Frenchmen, the moſt gallant and beſt appointed that can be ſeen. It behoves you, therefore to ſummon your friends and vaſſals, and haſten to Turkey with an army powerful enough to drive theſe Chriſtians acroſs

the

the Danube; but if your force is not very conſiderable, you will not be able to accompliſh it.'

'How many are they?' aſked Bajazet. 'Upwards of one hundred thouſand,' ſaid the Turk, 'and all on horſeback, armed in the beſt poſſible manner.' Bajazet made no reply to this, but entered the chamber of the ſultan of Babylon, leaving the Turk, who had brought this intelligence, among his people. He related what you have juſt heard to the ſultan of Babylon, who anſwered,—'You muſt provide yourſelf accordingly, and ſhall have men enough to oppoſe them, for we muſt, by all means, defend our religion and poſſeſſions.' 'That is true,' replied Bajazet, 'and my wiſhes are now accompliſhed; for I was deſirous that the king of Hungary would croſs the Danube with his army and enter Turkey. At preſent, I ſhall let him have full ſcope, but in the end he ſhall repay me fully for what he has done. It is four months ſince I heard of this expedition, from my good friend the duke of Milan, who at the ſame time ſent me twelve hawks and gerfalcons, the fineſt I ever ſaw. With theſe preſents, he wrote me the names and ſirnames of the barons of France who were coming to carry the war into Turkey, adding, that if I could capture thoſe named in his letter, their ranſoms would be worth to me more than a million of florins. Beſides the barons he mentioned, there ought to be with them from France, or the neighbouring countries, five hundred gallant ſquires. The duke of Milan adviſed me, if we had a battle, (which will

will infallibly be the caſe, for I ſhall march to meet them) to draw up my men with prudence, and to take every advantage in the combat; for they were all men of ſuch ability and reſolution, that the meaneſt would not fly, to avoid death. They have undertaken this expedition, as the duke writes me, ſolely through valour, to do ſome deeds of arms that may gain them renown. For this I feel myſelf thankful to them; and their deſire for arms ſhall be gratified within three months from this time, when, perhaps, they may have more than ſufficient.'

CHAP. XXXV

A DIGRESSION FROM THE PRINCIPAL HISTORY TO EXPLAIN WHY JOHN GALEAS OF MILAN WAS MOVED TO GIVE THE TURK INFORMATION OF THE EXPEDITION INTENDED AGAINST HIM.

WHAT Bajazet had told the ſultan of Babylon reſpecting the information he had received from the lord of Milan muſt ſurpriſe every one. It was ſuppoſed he had been baptiſed and was regenerated in our faith, and yet he had ſought the friendſhip and alliance of an infidel king, an enemy to our religion, and had every year ſent him preſents of hounds and hawks, or the fineſt linen cloth that

that could be procured at Rheims, Cambray, or in Holland, which is very agreeable to the Saracens, who have none but what comes from our country. Bajazet, in return, made him rich gifts of cloth of gold and precious ſtones, of which they have abundance; and we cannot obtain them without great riſk, unleſs by means of the Venetians or Genoeſe, who traffic with thoſe parts.

With regard to the count de Vertus, duke of Milan, and the lord Galeas, his father, who reigned over the Milaneſe as tyrants, it is marvellous to think of their fortunes, and how they firſt gained poſſeſſion of that country.

There were three brothers of the houſe of Viſconti, ſir Matthew, ſir Galeas and ſir Bernabo. Theſe three brothers had an uncle who was archbiſhop of Milan during the time the lord Charles de Luxembourg, king of Bohemia and Germany, was elected emperor in the room of Lewis of Bavaria, who had obtained that dignity by force. He was never acknowledged emperor by the church, but, on the contrary, was excommunicated by pope Innocent VI. who then reigned. The cauſe of his excommunication was, that after being crowned at Rome, by a pope and twelve cardinals of his creation, he gave liberty to his German ſoldiers to plunder Rome, to make them amends for the pay that was due. This was the recompenſe the Romans received for the reception they gave him; and for this cauſe he died under ſentence of excommunication. The pope and cardinals whom he had made come of their free will

to

to Avignon, and ſubmitted themſelves to pope Innocent, who abſolved them of their error.

To return to the lords of Milan: I will ſay how they firſt obtained poſſeſſion of the Milaneſe. This archbiſhop, their uncle, received in Milan the new emperor, on his return from Aix la Chapelle (where he had performed the uſual ceremonies for forty days) with ſo much magnificence and ſplendour that, in return for this good cheer and for a loan of one hundred thouſand ducats, the emperor created him viſcount of Milan, and gave to him the territory of the Milaneſe, and to his nephews after him, to hold during pleaſure, and until the hundred thouſand ducats were repaid in one ſum. When the archbiſhop died, his nephew, ſir Matthew, was acknowledged by the emperor as viſcount of Milan. His two brothers, ſir Galeas and ſir Bernabo, who then were far from rich, took council together, and determined to ſeize the government and rule over Lombardy: to accompliſh this, they reſolved on their brother's death, by poiſon or otherwiſe, and then to unite themſelves ſo ſtrongly by marriage that no one would dare to anger them.

After the death of ſir Matthew, they reigned with great power, and were on the beſt terms during their lives. They divided the country of Lombardy between them: ſir Galeas had ten towns, being the eldeſt brother, and ſir Bernabo nine; and Milan was governed alternately by them for one year. To maintain their government, and ſupply their expenſes, they laid heavy

taxes and gabelles on the people, and, by various means, extorted great wealth from their ſubjects. They had their towns garriſoned with foreign mercenaries, Germans, French, Bretons, Engliſh, and from every nation except Lombardy, for in the Lombards they had no confidence. Theſe ſoldiers were regularly paid every month, and were much dreaded by the people, for none dared to oppoſe them. When any of the neighbouring lords ventured to reſiſt their encroachments, they took a ſevere revenge, and deſtroyed ſeveral, that others might take warning.

The inhabitants of their towns were under ſuch awe, that they poſſeſſed nothing but through the good pleaſure of ſir Galeas and ſir Bernabo, and thoſe who were rich they taxed three or four times a year. They ſaid the Lombards were too proud of their riches, and good for nothing unleſs kept under ſubjection. They were indeed ſo by them, for none dared murmur or ſay a word againſt any of their commands. The two brothers married nobly, but they bought their wives from the wealth of their people. Sir Galeas eſpouſed Blanche, ſiſter to the good count of Savoy: before he had his conſent, he gave him one hundred thouſand ducats. Sir Bernabo married in Germany a ſiſter to the duke of Brunſwick, and did not pay a leſs ſum than his brother had done.* They had many

* Galeas Viſconti married Blanche of Savoy 10th September 1350.

Bernabo Viſconti married Beatrix Scaligera, through pride called Regina, 27th September 1350.

Anderſon's Royal Genealogies.

chil-

children, whom they married to powerful families, to add to their ſtrength. Sir Galeas had a ſon called John Galeas, and when he heard that king John of France had obtained his liberty from England, and that he was in great difficulty to procure the firſt payment of his ranſom, of three millions of francs, he negotiated with the king and his council to have one of the daughters of France for wife to his ſon John Galeas. His propoſals were liſtened to, becauſe they knew he was rich, and the king was diſtreſſed for money. He bought, therefore the daughter of king John for ſix hundred thouſand francs, which being paid to the king of England, his ſon married her. She brought him as her dower the county of Vertus in Champagne. They had a ſon and daughter, and the laſt was married, by dint of money, to the ſecond ſon of the late king Charles V. called Lewis, who is at this moment duke of Orleans, count of Blois and of Valois. This marriage coſt the count de Vertus, father of the lady, one million of francs, with part of which was bought the county of Blois, as you have heard related in this hiſtory.

The two brothers lived in great friendſhip with each other, which increaſed their power; and neither pope nor cardinal, who made war againſt them, could gain any advantage, nor any prince, except the marquis of Montferrat, who ſucceeded through the aid of ſir John Hawkwood and the Engliſh companies, whom he fought in Provence, and led into Lombardy.

After the death of Galeas, his ſon John Galeas, count de Vertus, reigned with great power, and at the beginning was much beloved in Lombardy for his prudent and wiſe conduct. He aboliſhed the moſt oppreſſive taxes his father had impoſed, and was ſo popular that all ſpoke well of him; but when he had ſo far ſucceeded, he ſhewed his natural diſpoſition, which he had long reſtrained. He laid an ambuſcade for his uncle, ſir Bernabo, who thought himſelf on the beſt terms with him; and, when he was taken, he was told that one lord was ſufficient for Lombardy. He could not obtain any favour, for the power was againſt him, and, being carried to a caſtle, was put to death, but how I know not.

Sir Bernabo had many fine children; and the queen of France is the daughter of one that was married to the duke of Auſtria and Bavaria. Sir Galeas ſeized all the children of his uncle he could lay hands on, as well as his poſſeſſions, which he annexed to his own, and reigned in great ſplendour and wealth. He ſhortly after renewed the taxes he had taken off, and extorted money from his ſubjects, by every means of impoſition, which made him more feared than loved. He followed the errors of his father, declaring and maintaining, that he would never believe in, nor adore God: in conſequence, he deprived the monaſteries of great part of their revenues, which he appropriated to himſelf, ſaying, the monks lived too delicately on rich food and choice wines; that ſuch ſuperfluities prevented them riſing at mid-

night

night to perform their church duties, and that Saint Benedict had not thus framed his laws for their conduct, but he would bring them back to eggs and thin wine, that their voices may be louder and clearer to chaunt in the church.

Thus did ſir Galeas, father and ſon, and ſir Bernabo, act like popes in their dominions as long as they lived: they did much injuſtice to churchmen, without fearing any thing the popes might ſay or do againſt them; and when the ſchiſm happened, and the two popes of Rome and Avignon were excommunicating each other, theſe lords of Milan laughed at both, as indeed did many other great lords.

The daughter of this ſir John Galeas, ducheſs of Orleans, inherited more of the diſpoſitions of her father than of her mother, who was a princeſs of France; for ſhe was envious, and covetous of the pomp of this world, and would gladly have ſeen her lord king of France, no matter how. A ſcandalous report was very current, that the diſorder of the king, which had ſo much diſtreſſed the kingdom, and baffled all the ſkill of the phyſicians, was owing to her. I will ſay what gave riſe to theſe ſuſpicions, and made them the more readily believed.

Valentina, ducheſs of Orleans, had a handſome ſon of the age of the dauphin of France, and while theſe two children were playing together in the chamber of the ducheſs, a poiſoned apple was thrown on the floor, near the dauphin, in hopes he would take it, but, through God's providence,

he did not. The ſon of the ducheſs, thinking no harm, ran and eat it, but he had no ſooner put it into his mouth than death followed, in ſpite of every care to prevent it. Thoſe who had the government of the dauphin carried him away, and never allowed him afterward to enter the apartments of the ducheſs. This ſtory cauſed great murmurings in Paris and elſewhere, and the people were ſo enraged againſt her, as to occaſion the duke to hear of it: they publicly ſaid in Paris, that if ſhe was not prevented from being near the king, they would come and take her away by force and put her to death, for that ſhe intended to poiſon the king and all his family, having already made him ſuffer by her enchantments. What gave additional weight to this, was the king's refuſal, during his illneſs, to ſee the queen, whom he would not recollect, nor any other perſon than the ducheſs of Orleans.

The duke of Orleans, to put an end to theſe ſcandalous reports, took her away from the hôtel de Saint Pol himſelf, and ſent her to one of his caſtles called Aſnieres, on the road to Beauvais, where ſhe remained ſome time without ever paſſing the gates of the caſtle. She was removed thence to Neufchâtel on the Loire, and the duke hated her much for the accident which had happened to his ſon: his other fine children, however, ſoftened his reſentment to her.

Intelligence of this was carried to Milan, and ſir Galeas heard with fear the great danger his daughter was in. He was very wroth with the king of

France

France and his miniſters, and ſent ſir James de la Berme, with other noble perſons, ambaſſadors to France, to excuſe his daughter, and to ſay, that if any knight ſhould accuſe her of treaſon, he would provide a perſon to challenge him to mortal combat. At the time theſe ambaſſadors came to Paris, the king was in tolerable health; but very little attention was paid them, or to the excuſes they made for the ducheſs of Orleans, and they received a ſhort anſwer.

When they ſaw this, they returned to Milan to relate to the duke what they had ſeen and heard. The duke was more angered than before, and ſent his defiance to the king and kingdom of France; but, when it was brought, the moſt gallant part of the French chivalry had already ſet out for Hungary, and were now entered into Turkey. From ſpite to the king of France, the duke of Milan had formed an alliance with Bajazet; and by his means was the ſultan regularly informed of all that was paſſing in Chriſtendom, and the ſecret hiſtory of France.

We will now leave this matter, and ſay how the ſultan Bajazet and the Chriſtian barons and knights in Turkey proſpered.

CHAP. XXXVI.

WHILE BAJAZET IS RAISING A GREAT ARMY TO OPPOSE THE HUNGARIANS AND FRENCH, THE LORD DE COUCY, DURING THE SIEGE OF NICOPOLI, DEFEATS A LARGE BODY OF TURKS WITH AN INFERIOR FORCE.

BAJAZET made no long ſtay at Cairo with the ſultan of Babylon, who promiſed to ſend a great army to his aid under the command of his beſt men at arms, that he might ſucceſsfully oppoſe the barons and knights of France. They diſpatched meſſengers on all ſides to all who they imagined could aſſiſt, begging they would exert themſelves in this affair, which was become of the greateſt conſequence; for, ſhould the French conquer Turkey, all the ſurrounding kingdoms would tremble, their religion be deſtroyed, and themſelves reduced to ſlavery under the Chriſtians, and it were far better to die before ſuch events ſhould happen.

Many Saracen kings obeyed the ſummons which Bajazet and the ſultan of Babylon had ſent as far as Perſia, Media and Tartary, and to the north to the kingdom of Lecto*, beyond the frontiers of Pruſſia. The Saracen monarchs having heard the army of the Chriſtians was compoſed of

* Lecto. MS. Locco.

the

the flower of their chivalry, ſelected from their own ſect thoſe of the greateſt ability, and who had been longeſt trained to arms; ſo that their armament was not ſoon ready to march, nor their purveyances prepared.

It was the intention of Bajazet to raiſe a force ſufficient to withſtand the Chriſtians: he therefore began his march towards Turkey, followed by large companies from various parts. Tartary, Perſia and Media, ſent him many valiant Saracens, who were impatient for the combat, and to try their force againſt the Chriſtians.

We will now leave Bajazet, and return to the Chriſtians who were beſieging the ſtrong city of Nicopoli.

The garriſon was very numerous, and defended the place valiantly againſt the attacks of their enemies, but expreſſed themſelves much ſurpriſed that they heard nothing of Bajazet. The emperor of Conſtantinople had indeed written to ſay, that he was ſtill in the country about Alexandria.

The beſieging army lay before Nicopoli, having proviſion in abundance which came to them from Hungary and the ſurrounding countries. During the ſiege, the lord de Coucy and ſome other French knights took a fancy to make an expedition farther into Turkey, for they were tired of remaining ſo long inactive, while the king of Hungary ſhould continue his approaches to the town. The lord de Coucy, as commander in chief, left the camp with about five hundred lances

and as many croſs-bows, on horſeback, accompanied by the lords de Roye, de Saint Py, the governor of Beauvoir, the lord de Montcaurel, the borgne de Montquel, and ſeveral more. They ſelected as guides ſome of the beſt mounted Hungarian ſcouts, well acquainted with the country, to lead them where they thought it was probable to meet the enemy.

This ſame week, the Turks likewiſe took the field to the amount of twenty thouſand men; for, having heard the Chriſtians were deſtroying and burning their country, they determined to put an end to it. They collected in the force I have ſaid, and advanced to a paſs through which it was neceſſary the Chriſtians ſhould march to enter the open country, for there was no other entrance. Having remained there for two days without hearing any thing of the enemy, they were on the point of returning the third day, when the Hungarian ſcouts came galloping * to the place where the Turks lay in ambuſh. When they thus ſaw them, they kept quiet to obſerve the Chriſtians without making any ſally or throwing a lance.

The Chriſtians advanced near to the Turks, and, although they could not ſee the whole, found they were very numerous. After a ſhort ſtay, they returned to inform the lord de Coucy and

* It is in D. Sauvage 'came to Brechaut;' but the MS. in the Muſeum has it as in the text, and my MS. 'brochant' (ſpurring) inſtead of 'courant.'

the

the other lords what they had ſeen. The Chriſtians were rejoiced on hearing it, and the lord de Coucy ſaid,—'We muſt advance, and ſee what kind of people they are; for, ſince we are come thus far, we muſt not return without offering them combat, otherwiſe we may be blamed.'

'You are in the right,' anſwered ſuch lords as heard him.

They then tightened their armour, rigirthed their horſes, and advanced at a gentle pace to where the Turks lay. There was a ſmall wood between the two parties: when the French knights came to it, they halted, and the lord de Coucy ſaid to ſir Reginald de Roye and the lord de Saint Py,—'I would adviſe, in order to draw the Turks out of their ambuſh, that you two advance with one hundred of our men, while we poſt the remainder in this wood. The Turks, ſeeing ſo ſmall a party, will quit their ambuſh: do you ſuffer yourſelves to be purſued, and, when paſt this wood, wheel round on them: we will inſtantly ſally forth, and thus incloſe and conquer them at our pleaſure.'

This plan was adopted, and the two knights ſet off with about one hundred of the beſt mounted: the main body, to the amount of eight hundred men of tried courage, entered the wood, where they hid themſelves. The others galloped towards the Turks, who were much pleaſed, thinking what they ſaw was the whole force of the enemy: they quitted their ambuſcade and advanced on the plain. The Chriſtian lords, obſerving this, turned

turned about, and ſuffered themſelves to be purſued, but, as they were ſo well mounted, the Turks could not come up with them. Both parties paſſed the wood without the ambuſh being noticed, when the lord de Coucy ſallied forth with his men, ſhouting, 'Our Lady for the lord de Coucy!' and, falling on the rear of the Turks, ſtruck down many.

The Turks halted, on finding themſelves thus ſurrounded, and made the beſt defence they could; but it little availed; for, not ſuſpecting any forces behind, they were thunderſtruck when they were attacked on all ſides. The French diſplayed great valour, and overthrew all that oppoſed them: they ſlew heaps on the field, and killed all they overtook in their flight like wild beaſts. They ſhewed mercy to none, and happy were they who could ſave themſelves. After this defeat, the French returned in the evening to the camp before Nicopoli.

News was ſpread thoughout the army that the lord de Coucy had, by his valour, overthrown more than fifteen thouſand Turks. Very many were loud in his praiſe for this action, but not ſo the count d'Eu; for he ſaid, 'the expedition had been undertaken through vanity, and that he ſaw nothing praiſe-worthy in it, as it had put the detachment under his command in great riſk, by attacking ſo very ſuperior a force. It was, beſide, his duty (ſince he was ſo eager to perform ſome deeds of arms, and had met the Turks in the field) to have ſent information of his intention to the commander

commander in chief, the count de Nevers, who was anxious to gain renown.' Thus, through envy as it may be ſuppoſed, did the count d'Eu ſpeak of the lord de Coucy. During the whole expedition, he never had any friendſhip for him, notwithſtanding he ſaw that he was beloved and reſpected by all the French and foreign knights, which, he imagined, ſhould have been his due; for he was very nearly connected by blood with the king of France, and bore for arms the flower de luces with a bar, and was beſides conſtable of France.

Such was the beginning of the hatred of the count d'Eu to the gallant lord de Coucy, which at laſt broke out, and cauſed the deſtruction of the Chriſtian army, as you will ſoon have related.

We will now leave this ſubject, and return to what was paſſing between the kings of France and England.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

THE DUKE OF GUELDRES PREVENTS THE EARL OF DERBY JOINING THE COUNTS OF HAINAULT AND OF OSTREVANT IN THEIR EXPEDITION AGAINST FRIESLAND — NEGOTIATIONS FOR PEACE BETWEEN FRANCE AND ENGLAND ARE CONTINUED UNTIL KING RICHARD CROSSES OVER TO CALAIS, TO CONCLUDE THEM WITH THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY.

YOU have before heard in this hiſtory that the marriage of the king of England with a princeſs of France was nearly approaching; that the two kings ſhewed great affection to each other, as did the relatives on either ſide, excepting the duke of Gloceſter. But he had no joy in it; for he knew that, by this connection, peace would be eſtabliſhed between the two kingdoms, which he would unwillingly ſee, for he only wiſhed for war, and excited all whom he thought ſo inclined, to throw every obſtacle in the way. At that time, there was a knight in his ſervice called ſir John Baquigay*, a reſerved man, who knew all the ſecrets of the duke, and who, by encouraging his warlike diſpoſitions, followed the natural bent of his own inclinations.

* Baquigay.—Muſuem MS. Hacquingay.—Hafod MS. Laquingay.

At

At this period the duke of Gueldres came to England to viſit the king and his uncles, and to offer his legal ſervices, for he was ſo bounden by faith and homage. The duke would gladly have ſeen the king making preparations for war, for he diſliked peace. The duke of Gueldres had many converſations with the duke of Lancaſter reſpecting the intended expedition of the counts of Hainault and of Oſtrevant againſt Frieſland; for at this moment Fierabras de Vertain was in England, having been ſent thither by the count d'Oſtrevant to ſeek men at arms and archers.

The earl of Derby had been requeſted to accompany his couſins of Hainault and Oſtrevant, to which he was well inclined, and had told Fierabras that he ſhould be well pleaſed to go to Frieſland, if it met the approbation of the king and his father. When, therefore, the duke of Gueldres came to England, the duke of Lancaſter ſpoke to him on this ſubject, and deſired him to ſay what he thought of it. He replied, 'that the expedition would be attended with much danger; that Frieſland was not a country eaſily conquered, and that many counts of Holland and Hainault, who in former times claimed it as their inheritance, had marched thither with great force, to bring it under their ſubjection, but had never returned. The Frieſlanders are a people void of honour and underſtanding, and ſhew mercy to none who fall in their way. They pay no reſpect to any lord, however great his rank; and their country is very ſtrong, ſurrounded by the ſea, and full of bogs, iſlands

ceſter is violently againſt it, and he leads the Londoners as he wills, and may attempt to ſtir up a rebellion in the country, and raiſe the people againſt me. Now, conſider, the danger I ſhould run if there were a ſecond rebellion, headed by the duke of Gloceſter and other great barons and knights who are, as I know, of his way of thinking. I am puzzled how to act, for my uncle of Gloceſter is of ſo reſerved a nature, no one knows his real thoughts.'

'My lord,' anſwered the count de St. Pol, 'you muſt gain him over by fair and kind ſpeeches. Make him handſome preſents, and, ſhould he demand any thing, however unreaſonable, grant it him inſtantly. This is the only means to gain him; and, if you continue ſuch conduct until your marriage be completed, your queen brought hither, and all affairs concluded, you may then follow a different method; for you will be powerful enough to cruſh all your enemies or rebellious ſubjects, as the king of France will at all times be ready to aſſiſt you, and this you may ſecurely depend upon.'

'In God's name, brother-in-law,' ſaid the king, 'you ſpeak to the purpoſe, and it ſhall be as you adviſe.'

The count de Saint Pol was lodged in London during his ſtay in England; but he had frequent conferences with the king at Eltham, and with the duke of Lancaſter on the ſubject of the marriage. It had been ordered at Paris, as the count told the king, that the king of France and his uncles would come

come to Saint Omer, and bring the young princeſs with them who was to be queen of England. It was therefore their wiſh that the king of England ſhould come to Calais, and that, between the towns of Saint Omer and Calais, an interview ſhould take place between the two kings, who from perſonal knowledge would have their affections much ſtrengthened; and then there might be ſome ſecret treaties made reſpecting a peace between them and their uncles, without employing too many perſons in the buſineſs, before the king carried his queen to England. If a peace could not be concluded, the truce was then to be prolonged for the term of thirty or forty years between France, England, and their allies.

This propoſal ſeemed ſo fair and honourable to the king of England and his council, that orders were inſtantly iſſued for purveyances of every kind to be made ready for the king's voyage and reſidenne at Calais. Many lords did the ſame. The duke and ducheſs of Gloceſter, with their children, were invited by the king to be of the party, as were the dukes and ducheſſes of York and Lancaſter: this laſt lady, being with her lord at Eltham, had already been aſked.

The king and the count de Saint Pol travelled together through Canterbury to Dover, followed by all the lords who had been invited to accompany him. In truth, the count de Saint Pol, from his impatience to carry the news to the king of France, croſſed the ſea on

his arrival at Dover to Boulogne, and haſtened thence to Paris, and related to the king and his uncles every thing which had paſſed with the king of England. This gave general ſatisfaction, and the king and court ſet out from Paris, and by ſhort days journies came to Amiens. In the mean time, the king of England, his uncles, and a large train of lords and ladies, had croſſed the ſea to Calais, where they were lodged. The duke of Burgundy came to St Omer to preſs forward the treaties, which were carried on through the mediation of the count de Pol and Robert the hermit.

The duke of Burgundy was conducted by the count de Saint Pol to Calais on the eve of our Lady the middle of Auguſt, to wait on the king of England and his uncles. He was welcomed with joy by the king and his lords; and they conferred together for ſome time on the articles for a peace, to which the king inclined: indeed, to ſay the truth, he was indifferent what might be agreed on provided he had his wife. When the duke of Burgundy had ſtaid at Calais two days negotiating a peace, the king told him that he would lay all the articles on his return to England before the parliament; for that neither himſelf nor his lords could agreed to any thing concluſive without the aſſent of the people of England, and it muſt be deferred until their will were known. He added, that he himſelf would go over, and return, and ſo make one journey for the concluſion

cluſion of all things. 'That will be well done,' replied the duke of Burgundy and the count de Saint Pol, who returned to St. Omer, and thence to Amiens, where they expected to meet the king and queen of France with their daughter, the future queen of England. The dukes of Berry and Brittany were alſo there; for the king of France had ſent for the laſt mentioned duke, who came thither in grand array.

The king of England and his lords returned to London; but their ladies remained until they ſhould come back, which was ſpeedily done. During this period, the expedition from Hainault againſt the Frieſlanders took place, commanded by the earl of Hainault and his ſon the count d'Oſtrevant. We will relate the arrangement of it, for it is now time.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

THE COUNTS OF HAINAULT AND OF OSTREVANT RAISE A LARGE ARMY OF MEN AT ARMS, KNIGHTS AND SQUIRES, TO INVADE FRIESLAND.—THE KING OF FRANCE SENDS THEM ASSISTANCE, UNDER THE COMMAND OF COUNT WALERAN DE ST. POL AND THE LORD CHARLES D'ALBRET.

YOU have before heard the great deſire duke Albert of Bavaria and his ſon William count d'Oſtrevant had to invade Frieſland, and to employ their arms in the conqueſt of it. The knights and ſquires of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, were willing to ſecond them, becauſe they thought it was their lawful inheritance. To gain aſſiſtance, the count d'Oſtrevant had ſent one of his ſquires, a renowned man at arms, called Fierabras de Vertain, to England, where he had been ſucceſsful: king Richard, out of affection to his couſin, had ſent him ſome men at arms, and two hundred archers, under the command of three Engliſh lords; one was named Cornewall, another Colleville, but the name of the third, who was a ſquire, I have forgotten. It was told me, and likewiſe that he was a gallant man at arms, and had been long uſed to war: a ſhort time before, he had in a riot had his chin cut off, which

which was replaced by one of ſilver that was faſtened by a ſilken cord tied round his head. This force arrived at Enchuyſen in proper time.

To be more particular in this matter, I muſt ſay that I was informed duke Albert held many conſultations with his ſon, the count d'Oſtrevant, and they called into their councils a noble and valiant ſquire, named William de Croembourg*, who earneſtly exhorted them to the war, for he mortally hated the Frieſlanders. He had done them ſome miſchief, and did them much more, as you ſhall hear.

Duke Albert of Bavaria ſet out from the Hague in company with his ſon, the count d'Oſtrevant, for Hainault, and convened the ſtates of that country at Mons, who readily obeyed the ſummons of their lord. He laid before them his wiſh to invade Frieſland, and remonſtrated on his right to do ſo, and the lawful claim he had on it. In proof of this, he had read to them certain letters patent, apoſtolical and imperial, authentically ſealed with lead and gold, which evidently ſhewed his right over that country. The duke addreſſed the meeting,—'My lords, and valiant men our ſubjects, you know that every one ought to guard and defend his inheritance, and that man, in the defence of himſelf or country, has a right to make war. You know alſo, that the Frieſlanders ought to acknowledge themſelves our ſubjects, but

* Croembourg.—In my MS. Croemebourc. Muſeum MS. Curembourch.

they are rebellious againſt us, and againſt our rights, like men without law or religion.

'Notwithſtanding the juſtice of our claim, we cannot, my very dear lords, without your perſonal and pecuniary aid, attempt to make theſe people liſten to reaſon. We therefore entreat your aſſiſtance in this neceſſity, both perſonal and pecuniary, that we may ſubjugate theſe diſobedient Frieſlanders to our will.'

To this remonſtrance the three eſtates unanimouſly aſſented; and, as they were always inclined to comply with the deſires of their lord, they preſented duke Albert, from the country of Hainault, the ſum of thirty thouſand francs in ready money, without including the town of Valenciennes. This town performed equally well its duty, for duke Albert, attended by his ſon, went thither, and made a ſimilar requeſt to what he had done ſo ſucceſsfully at Mons.

Theſe two valiant princes were very joyful to ſee their ſubjects ſo forward to aſſiſt their war, as it aſſured them they were well beloved by them. Since they had now a ſufficiency of money, they reſolved to inform the king of France of their intended expedition, and to requeſt aid from him. Two prudent and valiant knights, the lord de Ligne and the lord de Jumont, were ſent thither, and acquitted themſelves well, for they were much in favour with the French, eſpecially the lord de Ligne, whom the king, from his partiality to him, had made one of his chamberlains. He propoſed to the king of France the requeſt

requeſt of his lord, duke Albert of Bavaria, ſo eloquently, that he and his council promiſed the aſſiſtance he required. The duke of Burgundy was urgent for its being granted, becauſe his daughter having married the duke's ſon, he thought, if the expedition were ſucceſsful, it would be for the advantage of the count d'Oſtrevant.

Many of the great barons diſapproved of it, and ſpoke againſt it, ſaying,—'How can theſe Hainaulters come hither to ſolicit aid from our king, when they have already been to aſk the ſame from the Engliſh? Have we not lately ſeen that the count d'Oſtrevant has accepted of the order of the Garter, which is the Engliſh device? Has he ſhewn, by ſo doing, any very great affection for France?' But others, who were better informed replied,—'My fair ſirs, you are wrong to talk thus: if the count d'Oſtrevant has accepted the Garter, it was not to ally himſelf with England; for he is too ſtrongly connected with the French. Is it not true that he has married the lady Catherine, daughter to the duke of Burgundy? and is not this a better and more valuable alliance than the blue Garter? Never, therefore, ſay that he will not prefer doing ſervices to the French rather than to the Engliſh. The king will honour himſelf and exalt the French name, if he give him the aid he has been wiſely adviſed to afford.'

Thus did the French converſe on theſe matters, which made a great noiſe in France, for nothing was talked of but the deeds of arms that were to be performed in Hungary or Turkey againſt

againſt Bajazet, and in Frieſland againſt the Frieſlanders. The king of France did not delay raiſing an army of five hundred lances, compoſed of Picards and French, and gave the command of them to the count Waleran de St. Pol and the lord Charles d'Albret, two knights that were well qualified for the buſineſs. They were to lead this body of men to the town of Enchuyſen in lower Frieſland, as that was the place of aſſembly for the whole army, and they were to embark there for upper Frieſland, which they did.

When the two valiant knights, the lord de Ligne and the lord de Jumont, ſaw the good inclination of the king, and were aſſured that every order had been given, and the pay iſſued for the men at arms who were to be ſent to aſſiſt the count of Hainault, they took leave of the king of France, and, thanking him for his friendſhip to their lords, returned to Hainault, to relate to the duke of Bavaria and the count d'Oſtrevant how ſucceſsful they had been. They were received with the honours they had deſerved, and detailed the courteous anſwers they received from the king of France and the duke of Burgundy, who had feaſted them grandly, and the rich preſents that were given them, for which they thanked the duke and his ſon, as it was from affection to them they had been ſhewn ſuch courteſy. The whole would be too long to relate: we will therefore paſs it over, and come to the principal matter.

Duke Albert, on hearing that the king of France was to ſend to his aſſiſtance five hundred lances, aſſembled

aſſembled all his barons and vaſſals of Hainault. The aſſembly conſiſted of the lord de Vertain, ſénéſchal of Hainault, a very valiant man and renowned in arms; the lords de Ligne and de Gomegines, whom he appointed marſhals of his army; the lords de Havreth, Michelet de Ligne, de Lalain, de Hordaing, de Chin, de Cautain, du Queſnoy, de Fleron, his brother John, the lords de Bouſſet, de Jumont, (who were knights always eager to meet their enemies, but at this time they had bleared eyes, red as crimſon) Robert le Roux; the lords de Monthiaux, de Fontaines, de Seulles, the lords James de Sars, William de Hermes, and Pinchart his brother; the lords de Lens, de Verlammont, Anſeaux de Traſſeigines, Octes de Seauſſines and his brother Gerard; the lord de Iétre, his brother John: ſir Anſeaux de Sars, Bridaux de Montigny, Daniaux de la Poulle, Guy de la Poulle; the lord de Maſting; ſir Floridas de Villiers, who was a moſt valiant knight, and had gained great renown for his gallant deeds of arms againſt the Turks and Saracens in the Holy Land; ſir Euſtace de Vertain, ſir Fierabras de Vertain, who was but juſt returned from England, and rejoiced his lord with the ſucceſs of his miſſion there; the lord de Oſteven, ſir Raſſe de Montigny Thuq de Merſe; the lord de Rorſin, ſir John d'Andregines, Perſaht his brother, and great numbers of other gentlemen and ſquires, whom, having aſſembled in his hall at Mons, he addreſſed, ſaying, 'that he hoped they would all arm, and provide themſelves with followers and every neceſſary,

ceſſary, each according to his power, to aſſiſt him in his intended expedition againſt Frieſland; and that, out of affection to him, and regard to their own honour and renown, they would accompany him to his town of Enchuyſen, in lower Frieſland, and to Meemelie*, and thence embark with him for upper Frieſland, where he propoſed being, if it pleaſed God, by the middle of Auguſt enſuing, and that he would wait for them in one or other of the two before-mentioned towns; that it was his intention to go thither beforehand to make the neceſſary preparations, and to receive his men at arms, and ſuch Hollanders and Zealanders as would be induced to enter his ſervice, and aid him to the accompliſhment of his purpoſes.'

All the knights, ſquires and lords in Hainault inſtantly complied with his requeſt, and promiſed him their ſervices like loyal vaſſals. Duke Albert and the count d'Oſtrevant found them punctual in the performance of their promiſes, and they made themſelves ſpeedily ready, ſo that about the beginning of Auguſt of the year 1396, they aſſembled, and marched off in companies, handſomely arrayed, towards Antwerp, where they were to embark for Enchuyſen, the general rendezvous.

You may ſuppoſe, that when all theſe preparations were making for the departure of ſo many

* Meemelie.—Britiſh Muſeum MS. Metenelich. Hafod MS. Metmelic. Q. if not Medendric, which is not far from Enchuyſen.

knights

knights and ſquires, the ladies and damſels were not in high ſpirits. We muſt allow they were very much caſt down, for they ſaw their fathers, brothers, uncles, huſbands and lovers, going on a dangerous expedition, not having forgotten how, in former times, the Hainaulters with count William had remained on the field of battle in Frieſland. They were therefore fearful that what had happened to their predeceſſors might befal them, and loudly praiſed the ducheſs of Brabant for having forbidden any gentleman or others of her country to take part in this expedition.

The ladies frequently preſſed their lovers and friends to decline going, and many meetings were holden but to little purpoſe. They were particularly angry with Fierabras baſtard de Vertain, for they ſaid he was the principal promoter of this expedition.

Duke Albert and his ſon, on leaving Mons after the promiſe of the Hainaulters to aſſiſt them, returned to Zealand, and made ſimilar requeſts to the Zealanders, who in like manner complied; and the lord de la Vere, ſir Floris de Boeſſel, Floris d'Abel, the lord de Zenemberge, ſir Clais de Boyſel and Philip de Cortien, were very inſtrumental in forwarding the buſineſs. They as well as many other gentlemen inſtantly armed, and put themſelves in handſome array, plainly ſhewing they were deſirous to gain renown.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIX.

THE EARL OF HAINAULT LANDS WITH ARMY IN FRIESLAND.——HE DEFEATS T FRIESLANDERS IN BATTLE, BUT IS NEVE THELESS FORCED TO RETIRE TO HOLLA TO PASS THE WINTER, WITHOUT HAVI GAINED ANY THING IN FRIESLAND.

THE duke of Bavaria and his ſon, hav been ſo ſucceſsful in Hainault and Zeala made the ſame requeſts to the Hollanders, eſ cially to the barons and chief towns. To the truth, the Hollanders were much pleaſed hear war was about to be made on the Frieſlande they hated them, particularly the knights ſquires, for there was a continual warfare car on, and they mutually plundered each other the frontiers of the two countries. When great lords in Holland, ſuch as the lord d'A and other gallant knights and ſquires, heard ſupplications of their princes, duke Albert his ſon count William, they immediately offe their ſervices, and promiſed them every aſſiſtan They were ſpeedily armed, and the principal to ſupplied them with a large body of croſs-bo pikemen and men at arms. It was not long fore they were all aſſembled at Enchuyſen, wh veſſels had been provided to carry them to Fri land. They were ſo numerous, they were ſaid

be thirty thouſand ſailors, and that the town of Harlem alone had ſupplied twelve hundred. Theſe veſſels were amply freighted with warlike ſtores and other neceſſaries. You may imagine the grief of the ladies and damſels in Holland and Zealand was not leſs than thoſe of Hainault, when they found their lovers and relations were engaged in this war. Their anger fell chiefly on the lord de Cruembourg, becauſe they thought he had been the great adviſer of duke Albert in the matter, and on the lord de Merebbede. This laſt was eager for revenge on the Frieſlanders for the injuries they had done him: in the before mentioned battle, when count William was unfortunately ſlain, he had loſt three and thirty of his relations, bearing his arms on their coats, with ſir Daniel de Merebbede their leader; none of whom would the Frieſlanders ranſom. Theſe two lords, therefore, were afraid to appear before the princeſſes and ladies of duke Albert's court.

In a ſhort time, the whole army was aſſembled: the Engliſh came firſt, next the Hainaulters in very handſome array, under the command of the lord ſénéſchal de Jumont, and the lord de Gomegines, who was marſhal; then the Hollanders and Zealanders: but the French did not come ſo ſoon as expected, which delayed the embarkation eleven days. During this interval, there aroſe a quarrel between the Engliſh and Hollanders; and, had it not been for the count d'Oſtrevant, the Engliſh would have been ſlain. The quarrel was made up; and the French arrived, to the joy of all, for

for they conſiſted of a well appointed body of men at arms.

Every one was now ordered inſtantly to embark, which being done, they hoiſted ſail, recommended themſelves to God, and put to ſea. The water was ſmooth and ſeemed to take pleaſure in bearing them. There were ſuch numbers of veſſels that, had they been arranged in a line from Enchuyſen to Kuynder (which is in upper Frieſland, and where they intended to land), though twelve leagues diſtant, the whole ſea would have been covered; but they ſailed in one body.

We will for a while leave them, and ſpeak of the Frieſlanders, who, as I was informed, had been long acquainted with duke Albert's intention of marching againſt them with a powerful army. They held many councils on the ſubject, and determined to combat their enemies at the very moment of their landing; for they ſaid they ſhould prefer death with liberty, to being ſlaves; and would never quit the battle while alive. They alſo reſolved not to accept of ranſoms for any perſon, however high his rank, but to put their priſoners to death, or keep them in baniſhment from their own countries.

Among theſe was a Frieſlander of high birth and renown: he was of great ſtrength and ſtature, for he was taller by a head than all his countrymen. His name was Yves Jovere; but the Hollanders, Zealanders and Hainaulters called him 'The great Frieſlander.' This valiant man had gained much reputation in Pruſſia, Hungary, Turkey,

key, Rhodes and Cyprus, where he had performed ſuch deeds of valour that he was much ſpoken of. When he heard his countrymen thus readily reſolve on battle, he addreſſed them,—'O ye noble men, and free Frieſlanders, know that there is no fortune ſtable. If in former times you have, by your proweſs, conquered the Hainaulters, Hollanders and Zealanders, thoſe who are now about to invade us are men expert in war, and be aſſured they will act otherwiſe than their predeceſſors: you will ſee they will not fly, but fight with the utmoſt prudence. I would therefore adviſe that we ſuffer them to land and make what progreſs they can into the country: let us guard our towns and fortreſſes, and give up to them the plains, where they will waſte themſelves. Our country will not long ſupport them. It is beſide cut up with ditches and dykes, ſo that they cannot advance far into the interior, and they will be forced to return after having burnt ten or twelve villages. This they will the more ſpeedily do, for they cannot ride, nor indeed without difficulty march on foot, through the country, which will wear them out. The damage they can do will be trifling, and we can ſoon repair it; but, if we offer them battle, I very much fear we ſhall be overpowered, for I have been credibly informed they are one hundred thouſand men under arms.'

He ſaid truly, for they were at leaſt as many, if not more.

Three valiant Frieſland knights, ſir Feu de

When they were all diſembarked, they ranged themſelves along the dyke, each under his banner, and, when thus drawn up, their line extended more than half a league. The Frieſlanders, on their loſs of the dyke, retreated to another paſs, where they had caſt up the earth in their front, and the ditch was very deep: they amounted to about thirty thouſand, and, as they were at no great diſtance, were plainly ſeen by the Hainaulters and their allies, from their poſition on the dyke. Each party remained on the ground: in the mean time, the whole army was landed, with their baggage, and ſome tents were pitched, under which they repoſed themſelves during the Sunday and Monday, obſerving the Frieſlanders, with whom on theſe two days there were many ſkirmiſhes and deeds of arms.

Both armies were ready prepared for battle on the Tueſday morning: and many new knights were made of the Hainaulters, Hollanders and Zealanders, when it was reſolved to attack the enemy. They drew up in handſome array, placing their archers in front, intermixed with the ranks, and, with trumpets ſounding, marched to paſs the ditch. The Frieſlanders guarded themſelves from the arrows by means of the mound of earth thrown from the ditch, which was as high as their heads; but the Hollanders leaped into the ditch, and made bridges of their pikes and lances. The enemy defended themſelves valiantly, and gave ſuch rude blows on thoſe who attempted to

moun[illegible]

The Frieſlanders, noticing the movements of their enemies, ſallied forth, to the amount of about ſix thouſand, and mounted the dykes of ſee if they could any way prevent their landing. Among the Frieſlanders, there was a ſort of mad woman dreſſed in blue cloth, who, quitting her countrymen, ruſhed forward towards the Hainaulters and Hollanders, making ready for battle. When ſhe had approached the army within bow-ſhot, ſhe turned her back, and, raiſing up her petticoats and ſhift, ſhewed her bare rump to all who wiſhed to ſee it, bawling out ſome words in her own language, which meant, 'Take this for your welcome.' Thoſe on ſhip-board, ſeeing the wickedneſs of this woman, let fly ſuch a ſhower of arrows and bolts that her legs and thighs were larded with them; for it ſeemed a ſhower of ſnow, ſo many were the arrows ſhot at her. Several leaped into the water, and, purſuing this wretched woman with drawn ſwords, ſoon overtook her, and cut her into a thouſand pieces. In the mean time, the debarkation was taking effect; and the Hainaulters marched to the enemy, who received them courageouſly, with long pikes, and ſtaves ſhod with iron, and repulſed them vigorouſly. The landing was ſtrongly conteſted, and numbers were killed and wounded; but from the advantages of their bows and croſs-bows, and by their ſuperior mode of fighting, the Hainaulters gained the dyke, and remained victors on the field at this firſt attack.

and Hainaulters, they killed while in their hands.

The lord William de Cruembourg, and his two ſons, John and Henry, who had that morning been knighted, acquitted themſelves gallantly, and were the moſt active in ſlaying the Frieſlanders, ſhewing clearly they loved them not. To conclude, the Frieſlanders were completely defeated, and the greater part killed: ſome few were made priſoners, and about fifty carried to the Hague, where they remained a long time.

The lord of Kuynder, who was the lord of the town where duke Albert had landed, had ſurrendered himſelf to the duke on the Monday, and himſelf and two ſons were in the battale againſt the Frieſlanders. They lived afrerwards under the protection of duke Albert and his ſon count William.

After this defeat, the Hainaulters, Hollanders, Zealanders, French and Engliſh quartered themſelves about Kuynder, and took ſeveral towns and caſtles; but their captures were inconſiderable, for the Frieſlanders did them much harm by ambuſcades and ſkirmiſhes. If they made any priſoners, they had no ranſom to offer; and it wss ſeldom they would ſurrender, but fought until they were ſlain, ſaying they prefered death and liberty to being under the ſubjection of any lord whatever. Their friends or relations never brought any ranſoms for thoſe who were taken, but left them to die in priſon. The Frieſlanders offered their priſoners in exchange, man for man; but,

when

when their enemies had none to give in return, they put them to death.

When the Hainault army had been in the country about five weeks, and had deſtroyed and burnt many towns and villages, of little value indeed, the weather began to be very cold and to rain almoſt daily: there were alſo great tempeſts at ſea. Duke Albert and his ſon, in conſequence, propoſed the return of the army to lower Frieſland, whence they had come, and to march into Holland, the more comfortably to paſs the winter, which had ſet in very hard. This was done; and, on their arrival at Enchuyſen, the lords diſmiſſed their men, particularly the ſtrangers, with whom they were well contented, and paid them their full pay, thanking them at the ſame time for the ſervices they had rendered.

Thus was this great army diſbanded, without having made any conqueſt; but, two years after, theſe noble princes, duke Albert and his ſon count William, returned thither a ſecond time, and made great conqueſts by their excellent proweſs, which, if it pleaſe God, ſhall be fully recounted. But for the moment we will not ſay more, and relate the magnificent marriage of the king of England with the princeſs Iſabella of France.

CHAP. XL.

THE CEREMONY OF THE MARRIAGE OF THE KING OF ENGLAND WITH A PRINCESS OF FRANCE.—THE KING OF FRANCE DELIVERS HER TO THE KING OF ENGLAND, IN HIS TENT BETWEEN ARDRES AND CALAIS.

YOU have before heard of the journey of the king of England to Calais, where he reſided with his uncles, prelates and barons of his council, during which time he had held a conference with the duke of Burgundy reſpecting the articles of peace. The king had returned to London to wait the meeting of his parliament at Michaelmas; but in the mean time great purveyances were made, for him and for his barons, and ſent to Calais and Guines. The larger part were forwarded down the river Thames, but a good deal was collected in Flanders, at Damme, Bruges and Sluys, which were ſent by ſea to Calais.

In like manner, great preparations were made for the king of France, the duke of Orleans, their uncles, and the barons and prelates of France, at Saint Omer, Aire, Therouenne, Ardres, à la Montoire, Leulinghen, and in all the monaſteries and houſes round about. No expence was ſpared on either ſide; and the lords of each country were emulous to outſhine one another. In the abbey

of

of Saint Bertin*, great were the preparations to receive the royal viſitors.

The ſeſſion of parliament, which uſually laſts forty days, and is held in the king's palace at Weſtminſter, was now abridged, for the king attended it only five days: when the buſineſs of the nation, and what particularly intereſted the king, and had cauſed his return from Calais, was ſettled, he and his two uncles of Lancaſter and Gloceſter, and the members of his council, ſet out from London, and croſſed the ſea to Calais. The duke of York and the earl of Derby did not attend the king, but remained behind to guard England in his abſence.

Information was inſtantly ſent to the French lords in Picardy of the king of England's return to Calais; and the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy came to Saint Omer, and fixed their reſidence in the abbey of Saint Bertin. The king of France ſent the count de Saint Pol to king Richard, as ſoon as he heard of his arrival at Calais, to compliment him in his name, and to lay before him the orders which had been given for the ceremoy of his marriage. The king of England eagerly liſtened to this, for he took much pleaſure in the buſineſs. The count de Saint Pol, on his return to Saint Omer, was accompanied by the duke of Lancaſter, his ſon Beaufort of Lancaſter, the duke of Gloceſter, with his ſon Humphrey, the earl of Rutland, the earl marſhal, the earl of Huntingdon,

* Saint Bertin,—an abbey in the city of Saint Omer.

chamber-

chamberlain of England, and many other barons and knights, who were handſomely received by the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy. The duke of Brittany came thither alſo, having left the king of France and the young queen of England at Aire.

You muſt know that every honour and reſpect that could be imagined were paid to the Engliſh lords. The ducheſs of Burgundy entertained them ſplendidly at dinner; at which was preſent the ducheſs of Lancaſter, with her ſon and two daughters. There was an immenſe variety of different diſhes and decorations on the tables, and very rich preſents made of gold and ſilver plate: nothing, in ſhort, was ſpared, ſo that the Engliſh were aſtoniſhed where ſuch riches could come from, and eſpecially the duke of Gloceſter, who told his friends that the kingdom of France abounded in wealth and power. To ſoften the temper of the duke of Gloceſter, whom the French lords knew to be proud, and their bitter enemy, they paid him the moſt flattering attentions. Notwithſtanding this, and the handſome preſents they offered, which he accepted, the ſame rancour remained in his breaſt, and, in ſpite of every thing the French could ſay or do, whenever the ſubject of peace was mentioned, his anſwers were as harſh and ſevere as ever. The French are very ſubtle; but, with regard to him, they could never gain his affections; and his converſation was ſo reſerved, it was not poſſible to diſcover his real ſentiments.

When

When the duke of Burgundy ſaw this, he ſaid to his council,—'We ſhall never ſucceed until we gain over this duke of Gloceſter: as long as he lives, there will not be any ſolid peace with England, for he will ever find ſome cauſe of quarrel, and renew the hatred of the people of both countries: his whole thoughts are on this ſubject; and were it not for the amiable qualities of the king of England, which we hope may produce in time more favourable effects, in good truth he ſhould never have our couſin as his wife.'

After the ducheſs of Burgundy, the counteſs of Nevers, the counteſs of Saint Pol, and the lords and ladies of France, had, as you have heard, magnificently entertained the Engliſh lords and ladies, (at which time it was determined when and where the two kings ſhould meet, and the king of England receive his wife) the company took leave of each other, and the two dukes, with their ducheſſes and children, returned with the other barons and knights to Calais, and related to king Richard how grandly they had been received, and the rich preſents that had been made them.

Their praiſes pleaſed the king; for he was delighted whenever he heard the king of France or the French well ſpoken of, ſo much was he already enamoured with them, on account of the king's daughter whom he was to marry.

Shortly after this, the king of France, accompanied by the duke of Brittany, came to Saint Omer, and was lodged in the abbey of Saint Bertin:

Bertin: all who had before occupied it were forced to diſlodge. The dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon, having been ordered to confer with the king of England at Calais, ſet out from Saint Omer, and, on their arrival at Calais, were received with every honour and kindneſs by the king and his lords. They were entertained with ſplendour; and the three dukes concluded certain treaties with the king of England and his uncles. Many in France and England thought a peace had been concluded, for at that time the duke of Gloceſter was well inclined to it, in conſideration of the kind promiſes of the king, who had engaged, if a peace were made, to create his ſon Humphrey earl of Rocheſter, and make the annual revenue of it equal to two thouſand pounds ſterling, and to preſent the duke of Gloceſter with fifty thouſand nobles on his return to England.

Thus, through his avaricious diſpoſition, was the duke of Gloceſter ſoftened in his opinions reſpecting a peace with France. It was ſo viſible, that the French dukes obſerved it, for they had never before found him ſo tractable or moderate in his converſation. When the French lords had concluded the buſineſs they had come upon, they took leave of the king, and returned to the king of France and the duke of Orleans at Saint Omer, who were impatient to hear the ſucceſs of their journey.

The king of France departed from Saint Omer, and reſided in the fort of Ardres: the duke of Burgundy went to la Montoire, the duke of Brittany to the

the town of Eſque, the duke of Berry to Tournehem. The plain was covered with tents and pavilions full of French and Engliſh. The king of England and the duke of Lancaſter were lodged in Guines, and the duke of Gloceſter at Hamme.

On the vigil of the feaſt of Saint Simon and Saint Jude*, which fell on a Friday, in the year of grace 1396, the two kings left their lodgings on the point of ten o'clock, and, accompanied by their attendants, went to the tents that had reſpectively been prepared for them. Thence they advanced on foot to a certain ſpot which had been fixed on for their meeting, and which was ſurrounded by four hundred French and as many Engliſh knights brilliantly armed, with ſwords in hand. Theſe eight hundred knights were ſo drawn up, that the two kings paſſed between their ranks, conducted in the following order: the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter ſupported the king of France, as did the dukes of Berry and Burgundy the king of England; and thus they advanced ſlowly through the ranks of the knights: when the two kings were on the point of meeting, the eight hundred knights fell on their knees and wept for joy. The two kings met bare headed, and, having ſaluted, took each other by the hand; when the king of France led the king of England to his tent, which was handſome and richly adorned: the four dukes took each other by the hand and fol-

* The feaſt of Saint Simon and Saint Jude is on the 28th October.

lowed

lowed them. The Engliſh and French knights remained at their poſt, looking at their opponents with good humour, and never ſtirred until the whole ceremony was over.

The ſpot where the two kings had met was marked, and a chapel in honour of the Virgin Mary was propoſed to be erected on it, but I know not if it were ever put into execution. On the entrance of the two kings holding each other by the hand into the tent, the dukes of Orleans and of Bourbon came forward and caſt themſelves on their knees: the kings ſtopped and made them riſe. The ſix dukes then aſſembled in front and converſed together: the kings paſſed on, and had ſome converſation, while the wine and ſpices were preparing. The duke of Berry ſerved the king of France with the comfit box, and the duke of Burgundy with the cup of wine. In like manner was the king of England ſerved by the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter. After the kings had been ſerved, the knights of France and England took the wine and ſpices, and ſerved the prelates, dukes, princes and counts; and, after them, ſquires and other officers of the houſehold did the ſame to all within the tent, until every one had partaken of the ſpices and wine; during which time, the two kings freely converſed.

After a ſhort ſpace, the two monarchs took leave of each other, as did the different lords. The king of England and his uncles retired to their tents, while the horſes were made ready: they then mounted, and took the road towards Calais;

Calais; the king to Guines, the dukes of Lancaſter and Gloceſter to Hamme, and the others to their lodging at Calais.

In like manner did the king of France return to Ardres, accompanied by the duke of Orleans; the duke of Berry to Tournehem, and the duke of Burgundy to la Montoire; for nothing more was done that day, although the tents and pavilions of the king of France and other lords were left ſtanding.

At 11 o'clock of the Saturday morning, the feaſt of St. Simon and St. Jude, the king of England, attended by his uncles and all the noblemen who had accompanied him from England, waited on the king of France in his tent. They were received by the king, his brother and uncles, with great pomp and the moſt affectionate words. The dinner-tables were there laid out: that for the kings was long and handſome, and the ſide-board covered with the moſt magnificent plate.

The two kings were ſeated by themſelves; the king of France at the top of the table, and the king of England below him, but at a good diſtance from each other. They were ſerved by the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon: the laſt entertained the two monarchs with many gay remarks, to make them laugh, and thoſe about the table, for he had much drollery, and, addreſſing the king of England, ſaid,—'My lord king of England, you ought to make good cheer, for you have had all your wiſhes gratified. You have a wife, or ſhall have one, for ſhe will be ſpeedily delivered

to

to you.' 'Bourbonnois,' replied the king of France, 'we wiſh our daughter were as old as our couſin of Saint Pol, though we were to double her dower, for then ſhe would love our ſon of England much more.'

The king of England heard well theſe words, and replied, bowing to the king of France (for he did not addreſs himſelf to the duke of Burbon, ſince the king had compared his daughter with the counteſs of Saint Pol's), 'Good father-in-law, the age of our wife pleaſes us right well: we pay not ſo much attention concerning her age, as we value your love, and that of our ſubjects, for we ſhall now be ſo ſtrongly united that no king in Chriſtendom can any way hurt us.'

When dinner was over, which laſted not long, the cloth was removed, the tables carried away, and wine and ſpices brought. After this, the young queen of England entered the tent, attended by a great number of ladies and damſels. The king led her by the hand, and gave her to the king of England, who inſtantly after took his leave. The queen was placed in a very rich litter which had been prepared for her; but, of all the French ladies who were there, only the lady of Coucy went with her, for there were many of the principal ladies of England, ſuch as the ducheſſes of Lancaſter, York, Gloceſter, Ireland, the lady of Namur, the lady Poinings, and others of the nobility, who received queen Iſabella with great joy. When the ladies were ready, the king of England and his lords departed, and, riding at a good

good pace, arrived at Calais. The king of France and his court returned to Saint Omer, where he had left the queen and ducheſs of Burgundy, and ſtaid there the Sunday and Monday following. On the Tueſday, which was All-ſaints-day, the king of England was married by the archbiſhop of Canterbury, in the church of St. Nicholas at Calais, to the lady Iſabella of France. Great were the feaſtings on the occaſion, and the heralds and minſtrels were ſo liberally paid they were ſatisfied,

On the enſuing Thurſday, the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon came to Calais, to viſit the king and queen of England: they ſtaid that day, and on the following went back to dinner at St. Omer, where the king and queen of France waited for them. This ſame morning, the king and queen of England, having heard an early maſs and drank ſome wine, embarked on board the veſſels which had been prepared for them, with a favourable wind.

They weighed anchor, ſet their ſails, and, in leſs than three hours, landed at Dover. The king dined at the caſtle, and lay the next night at Rocheſter: paſſing through Dartford, he arrived at his palace of Eltham, where the lords and ladies took leave of the king and queen, and went to their homes.

Fifteen days after, the queen made her entry into London grandly attended by lords, ladies and damſels. She lay one night in the Tower, ſeated on the banks of the Thames, and the next day was conducted in great pomp, through the ſtreets, to

Weſtminſter, where the king was waiting in his palace to receive her. This day, the Londoners made very rich preſents to the queen, which were graciouſly accepted. During the time the court was at Weſtminſter, a tournament was ordered to be held at Candlemas in Smithfield, between forty knights and as many ſquires; and notices of it were given to the heralds, that they might publiſh it beyond ſea, and as far as Scotland.

When the king of France was returned to Paris after the marriage of his daughter, and his lords were gone to their reſidences, there were great rumours of war. It was ſaid to have been ſettled, that at the beginning of March, the king was to lead a large army into Lombardy to deſtroy the duke of Milan; and that the king was ſo bent on this expedition, he would not liſten to any thing that was ſaid againſt it. The king of England was to ſend his father-in-law ſix thouſand archers; and the duke of Brittany, who had been conſtantly with the king, offered his ſervices on the expedition, with two thouſand Breton ſpears. Purveyances were already making for the king and lords in Dauphiny and in Savoy.

When the duke of Brittany took leave of the king of France and his lords, to return to his duchy, I believe the duke of Burgundy made ſuch earneſt interceſſion with the king, and thoſe immediately concerned, that the duke of Brittany carried with him his couſin ſir Peter de Craon, who was confined a priſoner at his own charges, in the

tower

tower of the Louvre, for the debt he had been ſentenced to pay of one hunrded thouſand francs to the queen of Jeruſalem. I imagine he engaged to pay the queen the above ſum by inſtalments; but I will, for the preſent, leave ſpeaking of theſe matters, and return to what was paſſing in Turkey.

CHAP. XLI.

THE CHRISTIANS ARE FORCED TO RAISE THE SIEGE OF NICOPOLI, BY THE ARRIVAL OF BAJAZET IN TURKEY.—THEY ARE DEFEATED AND THE HUNGARIANS PUT TO FLIGHT, THROUGH THE PRESUMPTUOUS FOLLY OF THE FRENCH.

YOU have before read in our hiſtory how the king of Hungary, and the lords from France who had gone to Hungary in ſearch of deeds of arms, had valiantly croſſed the Danube, and entered Turkey; where, during the ſummer, from the month of July, they had conquered a large tract of country, having mercifully ſpared the inhabitants and many towns and caſtles, for none could withſtand their power. They had beſieged the city of Nicopoli, and ſo hardly preſſed it by their attacks, that it was on the point of ſurrender-

rendering, without hearing any intelligence of Bajazet.

The king of Hungary had even addreſſed the French lords, ſuch as the count de Nevers, the count d'Eu, the count de la Marche, the count de Soiſſons, the lord de Coucy, and the barons and knights of Burgundy, ſaying, — 'My fair ſirs, thanks to God, we have made a ſucceſsful campaign; for we have performed many brilliant deeds of arms, and have conquered Turkey. I look on the town of Nicopoli as our own, for it is ſo undermimed it can hold out no longer than we pleaſe. I therefore would propoſe, that after we ſhall have gained and ſhewn mercy to this town, we attempt nothing more this ſeaſon, but recroſs the Danube, and return to Hungary, where I have many handſome towns and caſtles prepared to receive you, ſince you have ſo gallantly aſſiſted me againſt the Turks, my bitter enemies. During the winter, we will provide ſtores for the enſuing ſummer, each according to his pleaſure, and ſend information of our ſituation, and what we have done, to the king of France, who, before that time, will ſend us large reinforcements; and I hope, when he ſhall know the ſucceſs we have had, he may be inclined to come hither in perſon, for he is young and fond of arms. But whether he come or not, if it pleaſe God, we will next ſummer croſs the Helleſpont, regain Armenia, and thence march to Syria, with the towns of Jaffa and Baruth, and conquer Jeruſalem and the Holy Land.

Should

Should the ſultan oppoſe us, we will offer him battle, and never return without having combated him.'

Such was the ſpeech of the king of Hungary to the French lords: they conſidered Nicopoli as won, but it fell out otherwiſe.

During the whole ſummer, Bajazet had been buſily employed in raiſing an army of Saracens and infidels: he had even ſent to Perſia for ſuccour, and the great lords of his religion had joined him againſt Chriſtendom. They had croſſed the Helleſpont to the amount of two hundred thouſand; but the Chriſtians were not only ignorant of their numbers, but of their approach; and, they advanced ſo ſecretly, they were cloſe to Nicopoli before the beſiegers knew of their having begun their march. Bajazet was as well acquainted with the ſtratagems of war as moſt, and of great valour and enterpriſe. He conſidered maturely the power of the Chriſtians, and ſaid they were a valiant race.

Bajazet marched to raiſe the ſiege of Nicopoli in the following order. His army was drawn up in the form of a harrow, and occupied about a league of ground: in front of this main body, and a league in advance, were eight thouſand Turks, to maſk the body of the army, which was divided into two wings. Bajazet was in the midſt of his main body, who thus quietly advanced, with their van-guard of eight thouſand in front: they were thus ordered, to make an appearance as if they were the whole army; but whenever they met

the Chriſtians, they were to fall back gently towards the main body, which was then to extend itſelf as much as poſſible, and endeavour to encloſe the Chriſtians, whom they ſhould then conquer at pleaſure. Such was the order of battle of Bajazet.

It happened, that on the Monday preceding Michaelmas-day, in the year 1396, about ten o'clock, as the king of Hungary and the lords, who were lying before Nicopoli, were ſeated at dinner, news was brought them that their enemies, the Turks, were near at hand; but, as I heard, the ſcouts did not inform them of the whole truth: they had not noticed the main body of the Turks, for the moment they ſaw the van-guard they dared not advance farther, as they were not men at arms fearleſs of ſuch an enterpriſe. The Hungarians and French had each ſcouts of their own, and both parties arrived nearly at the ſame time with this intelligence.

The greater part of the army were at dinner when the news was carried to the count de Nevers and the other French lords, the meſſenger bawling out, 'Come! quickly arm yourſelves, that you be not ſurpriſed, for the Turks are on full march to meet you.' This information was agreeable to many who were deſirous of arms: they inſtantly aroſe, puſhed the tables aſide, and demanded their horſes and armour. They were ſomewhat heated with wine, and haſtened to the field as well as they could. Banners and pennons were diſplayed, under which every one ranged himſelf in his proper poſt.

The

The banner of the Virgin Mary was unfurled, and the guard of it given to that valiant knight ſir John de Vienne, admiral of France. The French were ſo eager to arm themſelves that they were the firſt in the field, drawn up in handſome array, and ſeemingly fearleſs of the Turks; for they were ignorant of their immenſe numbers, and that Bajazet commanded in perſon.

As the French lords were haſtening from their tents to the field, the marſhal of the king of Hungary, named ſir Henry d'Oſtenlemhalle*, mounted on a handſome courſer, came to them with few attendants. He was a valiant and experienced knight, and had borne before him a pennon of his arms, which were a croſs anchored ſable on a field argent, which in heraldry is called croſs moline. He ſtopped, when oppoſite the banner of our Lady, where the principal lords were aſſembled, and ſaid aloud,—'I am ſent hither by my lord, the king of Hungary, who entreats you by me, that you will not begin the battle before you ſhall again hear from him; for he much ſuſpects and fears that the ſcouts have not brought exact intelligence of the numbers of the Turks. Within two hours you ſhall have more certain intelligence, for we have ſent other ſcouts, who will advance farther than the former ones, and bring us better information. Be aſſured the Turks will never attack you, unleſs you force them to it, or until they have collected all their forces together. You will act as you ſhall think

* MSS. Steulemchalle.

beſt, but ſuch are my lord the king's orders. I muſt now return, for I cannot longer ſtay.'

On ſaying this, the Hungarian marſhal left them, and the lords aſſembled together to conſider what was to be done. The lord de Coucy was aſked his opinion, and replied, that the king of Hungary had a right to order them, and that what he had requeſted was perfectly juſt. It was mentioned to me that the count d'Eu, conſtable of France, was vexed that his opinon had not been firſt aſked before the lord de Coucy's, and, through ſpite and malice, inſtantly oppoſed what he had ſaid, adding; 'Yes, yes, the king of Hungary wiſhes to gain all the honour of the day: he has given us the van guard, and now wants to take it away, that he may have the firſt blow: let thoſe who will believe what he ſends to us, for my part I never will:' then addreſſing the knight who bore his banner, he ſaid,—'In the name of God and Saint George, you ſhall ſee me this day prove myſelf a good knight.' The lord de Coucy thought this a very vain ſpeech of the conſtable, and, turning to ſir John de Vienne, who had the banner of our Lady under his guard, and by whom all the others were to rally, aſked what ought to be done. 'Lord de Coucy,' he replied, 'when truth and reaſon are not heard, folly and preſumption muſt reign; and, ſince the count d'Eu is determined to fight the enemy, we muſt follow him; but we ſhould have greater advantage, if we waited the king of Hungary's orders, and were all united.'

While they thus converſed, the infidels were faſt

faſt approaching: the two wings of their army, which conſiſted of ſixty thouſand men each, were already cloſing round them. The Chriſtians, obſerving this, would have retreated, but that was impoſſible, as they were completely ſurrounded. Many knights and ſquires, who had been uſed to arms, now knew the day muſt be loſt: notwithſtanding which they advanced, following the banner of our Lady, that was borne by that gallant knight ſir John de Vienne.

The lords of France were ſo richly dreſſed out, in their emblazoned ſurcoats, as to look like little kings; but, as I was told, when they met the Turks, they were not more than ſeven hundred, which ſufficiently ſhewed the folly of the meaſure; for, had they waited for the Hungarian army, conſiſting of ſixty thouſand men, they might, perhaps, have gained a victory, but, to their pride and preſumption, was the whole loſs owing; and it was ſo great, that never ſince the defeat at Roncevalles, where the twelve peers of France were ſlain, did the French ſuffer ſo conſiderably. However, before they were overcome, they made great ſlaughter of the Turks; though ſeveral knights and ſquires ſaw they were marching to deſtruction, through their own folly.

The French defeated the van battalion, and put it to flight, purſuing it into a valley where Bajazet was poſted with the main army. The French would have returned, as they were mounted on barbed horſes, but could not, for they were now incloſed on all ſides. The battle, therefore, raged with

with fury, and laſted a conſiderable time. News was carried to the king of Hungary, that the French, Engliſh and Germans were engaged with the Turks, not having obeyed his orders ſent them by the marſhal. He was very wroth on hearing it, as indeed he had reaſon to be, and foreſaw they would all be cut off. He ſaid to the grand maſter of Rhodes, who was beſide him, 'We ſhall loſe the day, from the vanity of the French: if they had believed me, and waited for our joining, we ſhould have had ſufficient ſtrength to cope with the enemy.'

As he thus ſpoke, looking behind him, he perceived that his men were flying panic-ſtruck, and the Turks purſuing them. He then ſaw the day was irrecoverably loſt, and thoſe near his perſon cried out,—'Sire, ſave yourſelf! for, ſhould you be killed or taken, Hungary will be completely ruined. We muſt be defeated through French pride; and their valour will prove in vain, for every one of them will be taken or ſlain; not one can poſſibly eſcape. Fly, therefore, from the danger, before it be too late.'

The king of Hungary was in the utmoſt rage to be thus defeated through the arrogance of the French, and obliged to fly, if he would avoid captivity or death. It was a moſt unfortunate day for the Hungarians and French; whoever runs away from battle is purſued, and, as the Hungarian fled in the greateſt confuſion, the Turks followed, killing them or making priſoners at pleaſure. God, however, aſſiſted the king of Hungary and the

grand maſter of Rhodes; for, on their arrival on the banks of the Danube, they found a ſmall veſſel belonging to the grand maſter, into which they entered, with only five more, and croſſed to the oppoſite ſhore. Had they delayed, they muſt have been killed or taken; for the Turks came to the river as they were paſſing it, and made a great ſlaughter of thoſe who had followed the king thinking to eſcape.

We will return to the French and Germans, who were fighting moſt valiantly. The lord de Montcaurel, a gallant knight from Artois, ſeeing the defeat inevitable, and wiſhing to ſave his ſon, who was very young, ſaid to his ſquire,—'Carry off my ſon: thou mayeſt eſcape by that wing which is open: ſave my ſon; and I will abide the event with my companions.' The youth, on hearing his father thus ſpeak, declared he would not go nor leave him in ſuch danger; but the father forced him away, and the ſquire brought him ſafely to the Danube: the youth, who was very melancholy at the ſituation of his father, was unfortunately drowned by falling between two barges, without a poſſibility of being ſaved. Sir William de la Trimouille, and his ſon diſplayed great feats of valour before they were ſlain. Sir John de Vienne, who bore the banner of our Lady, in ſpite of his deeds of arms, was killed graſping the banner in his hands, and thus was he found after the battle. The whole of the French force that had been engaged at this battle of Nicopoli were defeated and ſlain, by the means I have related.

The

The lord John of Burgundy, count of Nevers, was wondrous richly arrayed, as were the lord Guy de la Riviere, and many barons and knights from Burgundy in compliment to him. Two ſquires from Picardy, William d'Eu and the borgne de Montquel, who had diſplayed their courage in many former battles, did the ſame at Nicopoli. Theſe two ſquires, by their vigorous courage, twice forced through the Turkiſh army, and returned to the fight, but were at length ſlain. To ſay the truth, the whole of the French chivalry and thoſe from other countries acquitted themſelves moſt gallantly; and, had they been aſſiſted by th Hungarians with equal courage, the day would have turned out differently. But the whole of the miſchief was cauſed by the French, and their preſumption was their ruin. There was a knight from Picardy, called ſir James de Helly, who had reſided ſome time in Turkey, and had ſerved in arms under Amurat, father of the ſultan Bajazet, of whom we are now ſpeaking, and who knew a little of the Turkiſh language. When he ſaw the day was loſt, he thought of ſaving his life; and as he knew the Saracens to be a covetous race he ſurrendered himſelf to them, on their granting him his life. Thus did he eſcape, and alſo another ſquire from the Tournaiſis, called James du Fay, who had formerly ſerved Tamerlane king of Tartary; but when he learnt that the French were marching to Turkey, he quitted Tamerlane, and joined his countrymen. He was at this battle, and ſaved by Tamerlane's men, who

had been ordered thither in compliance with the requeſt made to him for aſſiſtance by Bajazet. Tamerlane had ſent him a conſiderable body of men, as Sacaren and Pagan kings always do to the aid of each other.

CHAP. XLII.

THE TURKS, AFTER THE BATTLE OF NICOPOLI PUT TO DEATH ALL THEIR PRISONERS, EXCEPT THE COUNT DE NEVERS AND SOME OTHER GREAT LORDS.

AT this battle of Nicopoli, which was ſo fatal to the French, very many were ſaved, from the extreme richneſs of their armour: they were dreſſed like kings; and the Saracens and Turks, who are avaricious, thought, by ſaving their lives, they ſhould gain large ranſoms; for they believed them much greater lords, from their appearance, than they really were.

The count de Nevers was made priſoner, as were the counts d'Eu and de la Marche, the lord de Coucy, the lord Henry de Bar, ſir Guy de la Trimouille, Boucicaut and others. The lord Philip de Bar, ſir John de Vienne, ſir William de la Trimouille and his ſon were killed. This battle laſted for three hours; and the king of Hungary

gary loſt his whole baggage, his gold and ſilver plate, jewels, and every thing elſe. He had eſcaped by fortunately finding a veſſel from Rhodes on the Danube, that had brought proviſions, in which he had croſſed the river with ſix others: had he not done ſo, he muſt have been ſlain or taken. There were more killed in the purſuit than in the battle, and numbers were drowned. Happy was he who could eſcape from ſuch danger by any means.

When the buſineſs was over, and the Turks, Perſians and others ſent thither by different infidel kings, had retired to their lodgings, (that is to ſay, to the tents and pavilions they had conquered from the Chriſtians, in which they found wines, meats and every other neceſſary) they enjoyed themſelves, and made merry, like men who have gained a victory over their enemies.

Bajazet diſmounted, at the ſound of many minſtrels, according to their cuſtom, at the principal tent that had belonged to the king of Hungary, which was very large, and richly adorned. Bajazet took pleaſure in viewing it, and glorified himſelf internally for the victory he had obtained over the Chriſtians, and thanked his God for it, according to the manner of their religion. When he was diſarmed, to cool and refreſh himſelf, he ſat on a ſilken carpet in the middle of the tent, and ſent for his principal friends, to chat and joke with them. He began the converſation, by ſaying he would now march a great force into Hungary, to conquer that country and the reſt of Chriſtendom,

which

which he would put under his obedience, but that each kingdom might follow its own religion and laws, owning him for their lord: that he would reign like Alexander of Macedon, who for twelve years governed the whole world, as he was deſcended from his blood.

All aſſented to what Bajazet ſaid, and agreed to his propoſal. He gave out three orders: the firſt, that every one who had made priſoners ſhould produce them before him the next day; the ſecond, that the dead ſhould be carefully examined, and the nobles and great lords be ſet apart, and left untouched until he had ſeen them; the third, that exact inquiries ſhould be made among the ſlain and priſoners after the king of Hungary, that he might know whether he was dead or alive. Theſe orders were fulfilled, for none dared diſobey them.

When Bajazet had refreſhed himſelf, and changed his dreſs, he reſolved to viſit the dead on the field of battle; for he had been told the victory had coſt him dear, and that he had loſt great numbers of men. He was much ſurpriſed to hear this, and would not believe it. He mounted his horſe, attended by his vizier, nobles and baſhaws: ſome ſaid his principal officers were his brothers, whom he would not acknowledge as ſuch, declaring he had no brothers. On his coming to the field of battle, he found what had been told him was true; for where one Chriſtian lay dead there were thirty of their enemies. The ſight vexed him much, and he ſaid aloud,—'This has been

been a cruel battle for our people: the Chriſtians have defended themſelves deſperately; but I will have this ſlaughter well revenged on thoſe who are priſoners.'

He now left the field and returned to his tent, comforting himſelf for the loſs he had ſuffered by the victory and defeat of the Chriſtians; but, notwithſtanding this, he paſſed the night in great fury. On the morrow, before he was riſen or had ſhewn himſelf, great numbers came before his tent, to learn his will reſpecting the priſoners; for it had been rumoured that he intended having them all put to death without mercy. Bajazet, however, in ſpite of his rage againſt the Chriſtians, had given orders that all the principal lords who had been made priſoners ſhould be ſeparated from the others, for he had been told they would pay him large ranſoms, and on that account he was inclined to ſpare them. He had alſo learnt that many of the Tartars, Arabs, Bedouins and Syrians, had made priſoners, from whom they expected to gain large fortunes, as indeed they did, by concealing their priſoners from Bajazet. Sir James de Helly, whom I mentioned before, was, luckily for him, brought this Tueſday morning before the tent of the ſultan, with many other priſoners, for he who had taken him was afraid of keeping him hid. As they were waiting the coming of Bajazet, ſome of the knights of his houſehold, ſtanding round the tent, recollected ſir James, and delivered him from the hands of thoſe who had taken him. He remained with the attendants of the ſultan, who had been

been formerly acquainted with him; and fortunate it was for him, as you will hear related, for to the greater part of the Chriſtians it was a diſaſtrous day.

Before Bajazet appeared, inquiries had been made who were the greateſt lords among the priſoners, and his interpreters had been very ſtrict in their examinations, putting ſuch aſide not to be killed. The firſt was John of Burgundy commander in chief, then the count d'Eu, the count de la Marche, the lord de Coucy, lord Henry de Bar, ſir Guy de la Trimouille, and two more, amounting in all to eight. Bajazet would ſee and talk with them. He eyed them long in ſilence, and theſe lords were conjured on their faith to avow if they were the perſons who had been ſo named. He alſo reſolved to ſend for ſir James de Helly, that he might aſſure him of the truth. On his coming, he was remembered by the ſultan, whom he had ſerved, and was now perfectly ſecure from danger. He was aſked if he knew thoſe French lords who were priſoners at the bottom of the tent. 'I cannot ſay,' he replied; 'but if I ſaw their faces, I ſhould know them all.' He was then ordered to go near and examine them, and report truly their names to the ſultan, for that his determination would be according to what he ſhould ſay. He went near the priſoners, and, bowing to them, knew them all. He told them his fortunate eſcape, and that he had been ſent by the ſultan to ſee if they were the perſons anſwering to the names they had given themſelves.

'Ah, ſir James,' ſaid they, 'you are well acquainted with us all: you ſee how fortune has turned againſt us, and what great danger we are in when we depend on the mercy of this ſultan. If it may any how ſave our lives, tell him we are of even greater rank than we have ſaid, and able to pay him large ſums for our ranſoms.' 'My lords,' replied ſir James, 'this I will moſt cheerfully do, for it is my duty.'

The knight then returned to Bajazet, and ſaid, 'thoſe lords who are priſoners, and with whom he had been talking, are of the nobleſt blood in France, nearly related to the king, and willing to pay for their liberty a great ſum of money.' This anſwer was very agreeable to the ſultan, who would not liſten to more, but ſaid, 'Let thoſe alone be ſpared, and all the other priſoners put to death, to free the country from them, and that others may take example from their fate.'

The ſultan now made his appearance to his people before the tent, who, bowing down, made him their obeiſance. The army was drawn up in two wings on each ſide; the ſultan with his nobles, the count de Nevers and thoſe who were to be ſpared, were in the center; for he would they ſhould witneſs the execution of their companions, which the Saracens were eager to perform. Many excellent knights and ſquires of France and other nations, who had been taken in battle or in the purſuit, were now brought forth in their ſhirts, one after another, before Bajazet who eyeing them a little, they were led on; and

as he made a ſignal, were inſtantly cut to pieces by thoſe waiting for them with drawn ſwords. Such was the cruel juſtice of Bajazet this day, when upwards of three hundred gentlemen of different nations were thus pitileſsly murdered. It was a cruel caſe for them to ſuffer for the love of our Saviour JESUS CHRIST, and may he receive their ſouls!

Among the murdered of that day was the gallant knight ſir Henry d'Antoing: may God ſhew gracious mercy to his ſoul! The lord Boucicaut, marſhal of France, was led naked, like the others, before Bajazet, and would have ſuffered the ſame cruel death, had not the count de Nevers left his companions, who were motionleſs at the ſad ſight, and flung himſelf on his knees to the ſultan, entreating him to ſpare the lord Boucicaut, who was much beloved by the king of France, and well able to pay a conſiderable ranſom; and the count made ſigns, as paying from one hand to the other, that he would give a large ſum of money, to ſoften the anger of the ſultan. Bajazet conſented to the requeſt of the count de Nevers, and the lord Boucicaut was put aſide with thoſe who were not to be killed. Others were brought forward, until the number I have mentioned was completed; ſuch was the cruel revenge the infidels had on the Chriſtians.

It ſeems, according to what I heard, that Bajazet took delight that the victory he had gained over the Chriſtians, and the capture of the count

de Nevers, ſhould be known in France, and carried thither by a French knight. Three knights, of whom ſir James de Helly was one, were brought before Bajazet and the count de Nevers, who was aſked which of the three he wiſhed ſhould go to the king of France and to his father the duke of Burgundy. Sir James de Helly had the good fortune to be made choice of, becauſe the count de Nevers was before acquainted with him: he therefore ſaid to the ſultan,—'Sir, I wiſh that this perſon may go to France from you and from me.' This was accepted by Bajazet, and ſir James de Helly remained with him and the other French lords; but the two unſucceſsful knights were delivered over to the ſoldiery, who maſſacred them without pity.

After all theſe things were done, every thing was quiet. Bajazet, having learnt that the king of Hungary was eſcaped, reſolved to march more into the interior of Turkey towards the city of Burſa, whither he would carry his priſoners, for he had done enough this campaign. He therefore diſbanded his army, more eſpecially that part of it which had come from diſtant countries. Thus was it done, and the army broke up, which had been compoſed of men from Tartary, Perſia, Media, Syria, Alexandria and Egypt, and from other diſtant countries of infidels.

Bajazet gave particular orders to ſir James de Helly, that when he went to France, he ſhould take his road through Lombardy, and ſalute from him the duke of Milan; and it was the ſultan's

intention

intention that ſir James ſhould publiſh wherever he paſſed the great victory he had gained over the Chriſtians. The count de Nevers wrote by him, as well for himſelf as for his fellow-priſoners, to the king of France, and to the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy. On receiving theſe letters and other verbal meſſages, the knight departed from the ſultan and the lords of France; but, before he ſet out, Bajazet made him promiſe, on oath, that as ſoon as he ſhould have performed the journey, and delivered all he had been charged with to the king of France and the other lords, he would return, which the knight ſwore he would do, and kept his oath.

We will now leave Bajazet, and the French lords who remained priſoners during his pleaſure, and ſpeak of other things.

CHAP. XLIII.

THE FRENCH AND OTHERS WHO HAD BEEN IN TURKEY SUFFER GREAT HARDSHIPS ON THEIR RETURN HOME, AFTER HAVING ESCAPED FROM THE BATTLE OF NICOPOLI.—SIR JAMES DE HELLY BRINGS CERTAIN INTELLIGENCE OF THIS DEFEAT TO THE KING OF FRANCE.

AFTER this memorable victory which the Turks and their allies gained over the Chriſtians, as has been related in this hiſtory, ſuch knights as could eſcape ſaved themſelves. On the Monday morning, the day of the battle, more than three hundred knights and ſquires, being out foraging, were not preſent at it. When they heard from the runaways that a defeat was inevitable, they gave over all thoughts of returning to their camp, but took different roads to make their eſcape from Turkey as ſpeedily as they could. French, Germans, and others, made for a country adjoining to Hungary, called Wallachia, which is well inhabited, and had been conquered from the Turks, and turned by force to the Chriſtian faith.

The guards of the paſſes and caſtles in Wallachia, allowed the Chriſtians who came from Turkey free entrance, and gave them lodging; but, on the morrow, when they were about to depart, they took from the knights their armour and all they had, and gave them in return a miſerable

ſerable jacket, and ſome little money, juſt enough to bear the day's expenſes. This favour was only ſhewn to gentlemen; for thoſe who were not of that rank were ſtripped naked, and ſcourged villainouſly with rods. The French and their companions ſuffered moſt exceedingly in proverty and diſtreſs, during their paſſage through Wallachia and Hungary; and with difficulty could they meet with any, who, for the love of God, would give a morſel of bread, or lodge them for the night.

They endured this miſery until they came to Vienna in Auſtria, where they were kindly received by the good people, who clothed ſuch as were naked, and ſhared with them their food. They were treated with the ſame kindneſs in Bohemia: had they found the Germans as hard-hearted as the Hungarians, they would never have been able to have returned home, but muſt have periſhed with cold and hunger on the road.

Thus, wherever they came, whether alone or in companies, they brought moſt melancholy news, which excited pity for them in every breaſt that heard their ſad tale.

Thoſe of the French nation, who had fled from Turkey, arrived at laſt at Paris, and told the melancholy event of the battle at Nicopoli; but they were not believed nor liſtened to: the Pariſians ſaid it was a pity that ſuch raſcally liars were not hanged or drowned, for daily ſpreading abroad ſo many falſehoods. This news was, however, confirmed by others who arrived after them, and told the ſame tale, ſome one way, and others diffe-

rently, but all agreeing as to the complete overthrow of the Hungarians and their allies.

The king of France was very much vexed on hearing ſuch melancholy news talked of, for there were too many of his relations implicated in the loſs, beſides other excellent knights and ſquires of France. He therefore forbade any thing to be ſaid on the ſubject, until he ſhould receive more poſitive information, to confirm the truth or falſehood of theſe reports; and thoſe who had divulged ſuch news, ſaying they were come from Turkey and Hungary, were arreſted, and confined in the Châtelet of Paris. They conſiſted of great numbers, and were told, that if what they had ſaid ſhould be found falſe, orders had been given for all of them to be drowned: for the king was very wroth they ſhould have publiſhed ſuch diſaſtrous news.

It happened that, on Chriſtmas-day about noon, Sir James de Helly arrived in Paris, and the moment he had diſmounted at his inn, he inqnired where the king was. They told him at the hôtel de Saint Pol, on the banks of the Seine, whither he went. There was with the king this day, as is uſual on ſuch ſolemn feſtivals, the duke of Orleans, the dukes of Berry, Burgundy, and Bourbon, the count de Saint Pol, and many of the nobility. Sir James de Helly entered the hôtel in the ſame dreſs he had rode in, booted and ſpurred, ſo that he was not known; for he had, for a long time, been ſeeking adventures in foreign parts, in preference to living with his relations and friends. By fair ſpeeches he got at laſt to the king's apart-

ment,

ment, and made himſelf known, ſaying he was come immediately from Bajazet and Turkey, and that he had been preſent at the battle of Nicopoli where the Chriſtians had loſt the day; and that he had brought certain intelligence from the count de Nevers, and from the other French lords with whom he had marched through Hungary. The knights of the king's chamber were pleaſed to hear this; for they knew the king, the duke of Burgundy, and many lords, were very anxious to learn true intelligence from thoſe countries. They therefore made way for him to approach the king: when near, he fell on his knees, as was right, and told all he had been charged with, as well by Bajazet, as by the count de Nevers and the French lords his fellow-priſoners. The king and lords liſtened attentively to all he ſaid, for they believed he was ſpeaking the truth. Many queſtions were aſked, in order to hear a more detailed account, to all of which he anſwered very pertinently, and to the ſatisfaction of the king, who was greatly affected at the loſs the king of Hungary and his chivalry had ſuffered. He was ſomewhat comforted that the king of Hungary had eſcaped death and priſon; for he ſuppoſed that he would renew the war againſt Turkey with vigour, and have ample revenge on Bajazet.

The king of France and his lords were rejoiced that the count de Nevers and his few companions were free from danger of being murdered; and, as they were now priſoners, the lords debated on the

the means of paying their ranſom. Sir James de Helly ſaid that he hoped Bajazet would, within a year or two, ſell them their liberty, for he was very avaricious. This he perſonally knew, having reſided a long time in Turkey, and for three years ſerved Amurat, father to the preſent ſultan.

The king made the knight riſe, and treated him kindly, as did the lords preſent. They ſaid, he had been very fortunate to have had a friend in ſo great a monarch as this infidel Bajazet, after ſuch a ſevere battle, and to be ſent by him with his meſſage to the king of France. He and his family ought to pride themſelves on ſuch good fortune. The king ordered all who had been confined in the Châtelet, for having firſt ſpread abroad this intelligence, to be ſet at liberty. They were happy to hear this, for many of them had repented they had talked ſo much.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

SIR JAMES DE HELLY, HAVING RECEIVED HIS DISPATCHES FROM THE KING OF FRANCE, ARRIVES IN HUNGARY, IN HIS WAY TO TURKEY.—THE KING SENDS SIR JOHN DE CHASTELMORANT, WITH PRESENTS TO BAJAZET, AND HIS RECOMMENDATIONS IN FAVOUR OF THE FRENCH PRISONERS.—THE MANNER IN WHICH THEY ARE TREATED.

WHEN the intelligence ſir James de Helly had brought was made public, all who had loſt huſband, brother, father or child, where in the utmoſt conſternation, as may eaſily be ſuppoſed. The high nobility of France, ſuch as the ducheſs of Burgundy and the lady Margaret of Hainault, were greatly afflicted on account of their ſon and huſband the count de Nevers, for he was much beloved by them. The counteſs of Eu lamented her lord the conſtable, as did the counteſs de la Marche: the ladies of Coucy, of Bar, and Sully, in like manner bewailed the melancholy ſituation of their lords. They were fortunate in having only their lords' captivity to lament, and were ſomewhat comforted thereat; but the relations and friends of thoſe who had been maſſacred were inconſolable, and the grief of France laſted a long time.

The duke of Burgundy treated moſt kindly ſir James

James de Helly for having brought him intelligence of his ſon: he made him many rich gifts, and retained him for one of his knights, with a penſion of two hundred livres a-year during his life. The king of France alſo, and the lords of the court, gave him handſome preſents. He informed them he was bound to return to Bajazet, after he ſhould have delivered his letters, as the ſultan's priſoner; for he was ſent ſolely with a view to publiſh Bajazet's victory, and to ſay what lords had periſhed or been made priſoners at the battle of Nicopoli. This ſeemed reaſonable, and the king, the duke of Burgundy, and ſuch lords as were at Paris, prepared to write to their friends and relations who were priſoners.

It was determined in council, that the king ſhould ſend ſome knight of renown, prudence and valour to Bajazet, who, having delivered his meſſage was to return with more detailed accounts of the ſtate of the priſoners, in caſe ſir James de Helly were not permitted ſo to do by the ſultan, whoſe priſoner he was. Sir John de Châteaumorant was ſelected for this embaſſy, as being every way qualified for it.

Sir James de Helly was aſked what jewels or preſents would be moſt acceptable to the ſultan, that the count de Nevers and the other priſoners might fare the better. The knight ſaid, that Bajazet took great pleaſure in viewing fine tapeſtry, from Arras or Picardy, which repreſented ancient hiſtories: he was alſo fond of gerfalcons: but he thought that fine linen from Rhiems, and ſcarlet cloths,

cloths, would be moſt acceptable to the ſultan and his lords. There was plenty of cloths of gold and ſilks in Turkey, with which they were amply provided, and conſequently would like things they could not get at home. The king and the duke of Burgundy, therefore, reſolved what to ſend, for they were anxious to pleaſe Bajazet on account of the count of Nevers.

Sir James de Helly remained at Paris, with the king and the lords, about twelve days, and was well liſtened to by all; for he entertained them with his adventures in Hungary and Turkey, and with deſcriptions of the manners of Bajazet. On his departure, he was told,—'Sir James, you may now ſet out on your return to the ſultan, at your leiſure. We ſuppoſe you will go through Lombardy, to the duke of Milan; for he and Bajazet are great friends, although they have never ſeen each other: but, whatever road you take, we entreat and order you to wait in Hungary for ſir John de Châteaumorant, who will be ſent by the king with preſents to the ſultan, as it is our intent that he purſue his journey from Hungary in your company to Turkey, or until you ſhall meet the ſultan, that he may behave the more kindly to the count de Nevers and his fellow-priſoners, who are now in his power.'

Sir James promiſed obedience, and, having received his diſpatches, took leave of the king, the duke of Burgundy, and the other lords, and left Paris, following the ſame road by which he had come. He continued his journey, firmly reſolved never

never to return to France until he had obtained his liberty. After his departure the duke of Burgundy was conſtantly employed in preparing the preſents for the ſultan; and, by the time they were provided, ſir John de Châteaumorant was ready to ſet out, for he had begun his preparations for the journey on his being firſt nominated to go thither. They made great haſte to have the preſents from the king to Bajazet in time for ſir John de Châteaumorant to overtake ſir James de Helly. Theſe preſents conſiſted of pieces of the beſt-worked tapeſtry from Arras, repreſenting the hiſtory of Alexander the Great and his conqueſts, which was a delightful ſight for all men of honour, the fineſt linens from Rheims, and ſcarlet and crimſon cloths, which were packed on ſix ſumpter-horſes.

All theſe things were eaſily to be had for money; but there was great difficulty in procuring white gerfalcons. At laſt, however, they were got, either in Paris or from Germany; and ſir John de Châteaumorant, having received his final inſtructions, left Paris, and began his journey fifteen days after ſir James de Helly.

In the interval during which theſe knights were on their journey, the king of Hungary returned to his kingdom. On his arrival being known, his ſubjects were greatly rejoiced, and flocked to him, for he was much beloved. They comforted him by ſaying, that if in this campaign he had been unfortunate, in another he would be more ſucceſsful,

ceſsful. The king bore his misfortunes as well as he could.

Immediately after the battle, Bajazet diſbanded his army and marched to the city of Burſa, carrying with him his priſoners. They were put under ſtrict confinement, and very little comfort allowed them. They ſuffered much from the change of diet, as they had always been accuſtomed to have their own cooks, and their tables ſerved with evrey delicacy; but of all this they were deprived, and forced to live on coarſe meat, and that badly, or not thoroughly dreſſed. They had plenty of ſpices, and millet bread, which is diſagreeable to a French palate. They had great difficulty in procuring wine: although they were great princes, there was not any attention paid them, for the Turks were indifferent whether they were ſick or in health; and if the advice of ſeveral had been adopted, they would all have been put to death.

Theſe lords of France comforted each other, and thankfully received whatever was given them, for they coud no way better themſelves. At the beginning of their captivity, ſeveral of them were very unwell: the count de Nevers bore his misfortune the beſt, and kept up his ſpirits to comfort the others. He was aſſiſted in this by the lord Boucicaut, the count de la Marche and lord Henry de Bar, who ſaid, that the honours and glories of arms could not be gained without meeting with unfortunate reverſes; and that no man, however valiant or lucky, or accuſtomed to war, had every thing according to his wiſh; and that they ought

to

to thank God for having had their lives ſaved from the furious rage of Bajazet and his followers, for it had been determined by the army to put every one to death. Boucicaut ſaid,—'I ought to be more thankful than any one to God for my life being ſpared, for I was brought out to be maſſacred as my companions had been, and ſhould have loſt my head, had not my lord of Nevers caſt himſelf on his knees to Bajazet, who, at his requeſt, granted me his pardon. I hold this a moſt fortunate eſcape; and ſince it was the good pleaſure of our lord that I ſhould live, I have no doubt but that God, who has delivered us from this peril, will continue his mercy to us, for we are his ſoldiers; and that we ſhall ſoon obtain our liberty, for we are now ſuffering in his cauſe. Beſide ſir James de Helly is on his road to France, who will relate to the king and barons our diſtreſs; and I expect, within the year, we ſhall receive comfort and our liberty. Things will not remain long as they are. There is much good ſenſe in the king and the duke of Burgundy, who will never forget us; and, by ſome means or other, we ſhall receive ſufficient ſums for our ranſoms.'

Thus the gallant knight, the lord Boucicaut, comforted himſelf, and bore his captivity with patience, as did likewiſe the young count de Nevers; but the lord de Coucy was ſorely afflicted, which is not to be wondered at. Before this event, he had been a lord of ſuch high ſpirit as nothing could caſt lown: this captivity in Turkey, however, preyed n his mind more than it did on the ſpirits of the

the others, and he became quite melancholy. He complained of great oppreſſion at his heart, and ſaid he ſhould never return to France; that he had eſcaped many perils and dangerous adventures, but this would be his laſt. The lord Henry de Bar conſoled him, and blamed him for being ſo diſconſolate without cauſe; and told him it was folly to be thus caſt down, when he ought to find more ſatisfaction in his own mind than any other. Notwithſtanding the advice he was giving, he himſelf ſeverely felt his own ſituation, and bitterly regretted his wife. The count d'Eu, conſtable of France, ſuffered from ſimilar regrets. Sir Guy de la Trimouille and the count de la Marche kept up their ſpirits very tolerably. Bajazet was deſirous they ſhould have ſome amuſements in their captivity, and at times viſited and converſed with them moſt graciouſly: he was likewiſe anxious they ſhould witneſs his ſtate and power.

We will now leave them, and return to ſir James de Helly and ſir John de Châteaumorant, who were both journeying towards Hungary.

CHAP. XLIV.

SIR JAMES DE HELLY, ON HIS RETURN TO TURKEY, OBTAINS HIS LIBERTY, AND CARRIES A PASSPORT FROM THE SULTAN TO SIR JOHN DE CHASTELMORANT IN HUNGARY.—SIR JOHN DE CHASTELMORANT IS FORCED TO SEND A MESSENGER TO THE KING OF FRANCE, TO INFORM HIM THAT THE KING OF HUNGARY WILL NOT ALLOW THE PRESENTS TO BE CARRIED TO THE SULTAN.

SIR James de Helly waited about ten or twelve days at Buda, in Hungary, for ſir John de Châteaumorant, who was continuing his road as expeditiouſly as he could. Sir James was rejoiced on his arrival; for he was impatient to return to Turkey to acquit himſelf of his promiſe, and to ſee and bring comfort to the count de Nevers and the other French lords who were priſoners.

The king of Hungary made ſir John de Châteaumorant a kind welcome, in compliment to the king of France and his royal couſins. He learnt from his people that the knight was carrying magnificent preſents, and rich jewels, to the ſultan: this vexed him greatly, but he prudently diſſembled any knowledge of it until ſir James de Helly ſhould have ſet out for Turkey. He declared, however, to his confidential friends, that that recreant dog, Bajazet, ſhould never receive any preſents

ſents from France or elſewhere, if he had the power to prevent it. When ſir James had refreſhed himſelf ſome time at Buda, he took leave of the king and of Châteaumorant, to continue his journey to Turkey, that he might obtain from the ſultan a paſſport for ſir John to purſue his road to him. When ſir James mentioned it, the king of Hungary replied he would do well. On this the knight, having procured guides, was conducted by them through Hungary and Wallachia to Burſa, but did not find there Bajazet, who was gone to another town in Turkey called Poly*. Wherever he went he carried the priſoners with him, excepting the lord de Coucy, who was left at Burſa, unable to ride from ſickneſs. There tarried with him his couſin, a valiant baron from Greece, and a deſcendant of the dukes of Auſtria, called the lord de Mathelin.

Sir James de Helly continued his journey to Poly, where he met Bajazet, who was glad to ſee him return from France, and keep his word. Sir James humbled himſelf much before him, and ſaid, 'Moſt dear and redoubted lord, here is your priſoner, who has delivered, to the beſt of his abilities, the meſſage you have charged him with.' Bajazet replied, 'Thou art welcome, for thou haſt loyally acquitted thyſelf; and, in conſideration of it, I now give thee thy liberty.'

Sir James thanked him reſpectfully for this favour, and told him that the king of France, and

* Poly. Q. Conſtantinople.

the duke of Burgundy, father to the count de Nevers his priſoner, had ſent him an honourable knight with credential letters as ambaſſador, and likewiſe with ſuch grand preſents as he was ſure would give him delight. The ſultan aſked if he had ſeen them. He replied, 'I have not; but the knight charged with the commiſſion has brought them as far as Hungary, and is now at Buda waiting my return, with paſſports for him to continue his journey: I came to announce his news to you, and to ſolicit paſſports, if it be agreeable to you to receive him.' 'We are very willing he ſhould have paſſports, and you may have them made out in any form you chooſe.'

The knight thanked him for his gracious anſwer, when the ſultan left him to attend to other affairs. About an hour afterwards, ſir James requeſted the ſultan's permiſſion to viſit and converſe with the French priſoners, as he had much to ſay to them from their friends and relations. Bajazet was ſome time ſilent before he gave him an anſwer, when he ſaid, 'Thou ſhalt ſee one of them; but not more.' He then made a ſign to his attendants for the count de Nevers to be brought to converſe with ſir James for a ſhort ſpace, and then to be carried back to his priſon.

The order was inſtantly obeyed; and the count de Nevers ſaw ſir James de Helly with great joy. He made many inquiries after the king of France, the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, and what was paſſing in that country. The knight related to him every thing he had ſeen or heard, and deli-

vered

vered him all the meſſages he had been charged with; but they were greatly interrupted by the officers of the ſultan, who preſſed them to finiſh their converſation, as they had other buſineſs to attend to.

Sir James aſked the count if all the other French lords were in good health. He replied,—'All except the lord de Coucy, who has remained ſick at Burſa; and this favour, I underſtand, has been granted through the credit of the lord de Mathelin, who has pledged himſelf for him, and is much eſteemed by the ſultan.' Sir James then told him that the king and the duke of Burgundy had ſent ſir John Châteaumorant as ambaſſador to Bajazet, with moſt magnificent preſents to ſoften the ſultan's anger; but that ſir John had ſtopped at Buda in Hungary until he ſhould return with a paſſport for him and his attendants; that the ſultan had promiſed the paſſport, with which he intended returning to Buda in a very few days.

The count de Nevers was exceedingly rejoiced on hearing this; but he dared not give way to his feelings, for the Turks were obſerving them. The laſt words the count ſaid to him were,—'Sir James, I underſtand that Bajazet has given you your liberty, and that you may return to France when you pleaſe. On your arrival there, tell my lord and father from me, that if he have any intention to ranſom me and my companions he muſt not delay to negotiate through the means of Venetian or Genoeſe merchants, and cloſe with the firſt offer the ſultan, or his miniſters for him, may

make; for we are loſt for ever, if it be longer neglected. But I underſtand that the ſultan is very loyal and courteous in his character, when applied to properly.'

Thus ended their interview, and the count de Nevers was conducted back to priſon. Sir James de Helly haſtened the paſſport which had been promiſed him. When it had been drawn out in the uſual form, and ſealed by Bajazet, it was delivered to the knight, who took leave of the ſultan and his court, and ſet off on his return to Buda. He inſtantly waited on ſir John de Châteaumorant, who was impatiently expecting him, and ſaid,—'I bring you a paſſport for yourſelf and your attendants, to go and return in ſafety from Turkey, which the ſultan readily granted me.'

'That is well done,' replied ſir John: 'let us go to the king of Hungary, and tell him the news. To-morrow morning, I will begin my journey, for I have ſtaid here long enough.'

They went to the king's chamber, and related to him all you have juſt heard. The king replied,—'Châteaumorant and Helly, I am glad to ſee you both, as well on your own account as for the affection I bear to the king and my couſins of France, and I ſhall at all times be happy to ſerve you. You may travel through any part of my kingdom, unmoleſted, or even into Turkey, if it be your pleaſure; but with regard to your carrying any rich preſents or jewels to the ſultan, which you, Châteaumorant, are charged with from France, I will never conſent that they paſs through

my

my kingdom, to be offered to the infidel Bajaget, for he ſhall never be enriched by them. I ſhould be extremely blamed and laughed at, if in future times he be enabled to boaſt, that to gain his love, and from fear, becauſe he has gained a victory over me, and detains ſome great barons of France priſoners, the king of France and his princes have ſent him rich preſents. In reſpect to the gerfalcons, I am indifferent whether he have them or not; for birds fly any where, and are as ſoon loſt as given; but with reſpect to fine tapeſtry, which would remain as a proof of his boaſtings being true, I will not conſent that he enjoy the pleaſure of poſſeſſing it. Therefore Châteaumorant,' continued the king of Hungary, 'if you wiſh to make a journey into Turkey, to ſee Bajazet, and preſent him with the falcons, you may do ſo, but you ſhall not carry him any thing elſe.'

Sir John de Châteaumorant replied,—'Certainly, ſire, it is not the intention of the king of France, nor to his honour more than to that of the other lords who have ſent me, that I fail in any particular in the accompliſhment of the objects they have charged me with.'

'Very well,' ſaid the king: 'you will not at preſent have any other anſwer from me than what you have heard.'

The two knights left the apartment, and conſulted together how to act, for this refuſal of the king of Hungary had diſconcerted them. They thought their only expedient was to ſend off a

meſſenger expreſs with the account of the king of Hungary's conduct to the king of France and the duke of Burgundy, for them to provide a remedy, and to explain the cauſes of their delay. They wrote, in conſequence, letters to the king and the duke of Burgundy, and engaged a truſty meſſenger to carry them, whom they ſupplied with a ſufficiency of money for him frequently to change his horſes on the road, that he might haſten his journey, while they waited his return at Buda.

The meſſenger journeyed with great diligence to Paris, and delivered his letters to the king of France and the duke of Burgundy. Having read them, they were much ſurpriſed and vexed that the king of Hungary ſhould prevent their ambaſſador from continuing his journey with the preſents to the ſultan of Turkey, as they had ordered him to do. The duke of Berry, however, excuſed the king of Hungary, ſaying he was no way to blame, for it was too debaſing to a king of France to ſend preſents and jewels to ſuch a recreant pagan king. The duke of Burgundy was more nearly affected in the matter, and defended the meaſure as reaſonable, ſince fortune had been ſo favourable, to give the ſultan a victory, in which the whole force of the king of Hungary was ſlain or put to flight, and the greater part of the nobles made priſoners, that had been in the battle. It therefore behoved their relations and friends to adopt every mode for their deliverance, if they were deſirous of ſeeing them again.

This

This ſpeech of the duke of Burgundy was ſupported by the king and council. The king aſked the duke of Berry,—'Good uncle, if this ſultan Bajazet, or any other pagan king, were to ſend you a rich and ſparkling ruby, would you accept of it?' 'My lord,' replied the duke, 'I ſhould conſider of it.' The king reminded him that it was not ten years ſince the ſultan had ſent him a ruby that had coſt twenty thouſand francs.

The king of Hungary was condemned by all for having prevented the preſents from being carried to the ſultan, which might have the effect of adding to the diſtreſsful ſtate of the French lords that were priſoners. The king was therefore adviſed to write courteous letters to the king of Hungary, to requeſt that he would no longer prevent his ambaſſador from proceeding on his journey with the preſents to the court of Turkey. When they had been fairly written out and ſealed, they were given to the meſſenger from Hungary, who, leaving Paris, ſet out on his return to Buda.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVI.

THE DUCHESS OF ORLEANS IS SUSPECTED OF CAUSING THE KING'S ILLNESS.

EVERY year the king of France had relapſes of his frenzy, without any phyſician or ſurgeon being able to prevent it. Some indeed had boaſted that they would reſtore him to ſound health, but it was ſoon found they laboured in vain. The king's diſorder never ceaſed until it had run its courſe, in ſpite of prayers and medicines. Some of the phyſicians and ſorcerers who attended the king, on finding their labour loſt, declared the king muſt have been poiſoned or enchanted by ſome pernicious herbs. This agitated greatly the minds of the nobility and people, for theſe ſorcerers affirmed, the better to gain belief, that the king was under the power of ſorcery, and that they knew it from the devil who had revealed it to them. Several of theſe conjurors had been burnt at Paris and Avignon, for having gone ſo far as to ſay that the ducheſs of Orleans, daughter to the duke of Milan, was the cauſe of this miſchief, that ſhe might ſucceed to the crown of France. This was ſo much believed that common report ſaid ſhe had frequently practiſed ſuch arts, and that, ſo long as ſhe was near the perſon of the king, he neither would nor could regain his health.

It

It was therefore neceſſary, to put an end to this lander, that the ducheſs of Orleans ſhould quit Paris. She went firſt to reſide at Aſnieres, a very handſome caſtle near Pontoiſe, that belonged to the duke her lord, and then to Neufchâteau, on the Loire, which alſo belonged to him. The duke of Orleans was very melancholy on hearing ſuch injurious reports againſt his ducheſs, which he diſſembled as well as he could, and never on this account quitted the king or court, for he took pleaſure in attending public buſineſs and the different councils on the affairs of the realm.

Galeas duke of Milan was duly informed of the infamous crimes his daughter, the ducheſs of Orleans, was accuſed of. He deeply felt the injury, and had twice or thrice ſent ambaſſadors to France, to exculpate his daughter to the king of France and his council, offering, at the ſame time, a knight or knights that ſhould engage in mortal combat any perſon who ſhould dare to accuſe his daughter of ſuch iniquitous and treaſonable practices. The duke of Milan threatened to make war on France; for he had learnt that the king, when he gave his daughter in marriage to the king of England, between Ardres and Calais, had declared that on his return to Paris, he would not attend to any thing until he ſhould march a large army into the Milaneſe; and that his ſon-in-law, king Richard, had, to his great ſatisfaction, offered him one thouſand Engliſh ſpears and ſix thouſand archers. Galeas had likewiſe heard that purveyances were making throughout

throughout Dauphiny and Savoy for the king of France, for it was by Piedmont he intended entering Lombardy.

This expedition, however, was laid aſide, and no more thought of, when the news arrived of the unfortunate iſſue of the battle of Nicopoli, and the death and captivity of the French nobles. The king and the duke of Burgundy were ſo afflicted at this event, that they could not attend to any thing elſe: they beſides knew that the duke of Milan was on the moſt friendly terms with Bajazet, which was an additional reaſon at this moment not to puſh any hoſtile attempts againſt him, and he was left unmoleſted.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVII.

THE DUKE AND DUCHESS OF BURGUNDY DILIGENTLY EXERT THEMSELVES TO FIND MEANS TO RANSOM THE COUNT DE NEVERS, THEIR SON, AND HIS FELLOW-PRISONERS IN TURKEY.—THE KING OF HUNGARY, THROUGH THE PERSUASION OF THE GRAND MASTER OF RHODES, PERMITS THE AMBASSADOR FROM THE KING OF FRANCE TO PASS THROUGH HIS KINGDOM WITH THE PRESENTS FOR THE SULTAN BAJAZET.

THE duke and dutchess of Burgundy conſidered every poſſible means of recovering their ſon. As they knew they muſt pay a very large ſum for his ranſom, they reduced their expences as much as poſſible, to gather all the money they could; without this, they knew they could not ſucceed; and made many friends among the Venetian and Genoeſe merchants, for through their means the ranſoms were to be negotiated.

The duke of Burgundy reſided with the king, who converſed with him frequently on affairs of ſtate, and paid attention to what he ſaid; for the duke had the principal ſhare in the government, which made his own affairs proſper the more.

At this time there lived in Paris a Lombard, who was a great and rich merchant, and tranſacted buſineſs for the other Lombards: he was known and

and ſpoken of all over the world, wherever commerce was carried on: his name was Dinde Deſponde, and by him all exchanges were made. If before the event of the battle of Nicopoli he was beloved by the king of France and the lords of his court, he was now much more ſo, and had frequent conſultations with the duke of Burgundy on the ſureſt means to recover his ſon and the other lords who were priſoners in Turkey.

Dinde Deſponde ſaid to the duke,—'My lord, by degrees all things are brought about. The merchants of Genoa, and of the iſlands under their obedience, are well known every where, and traffic with Cairo, Alexandria, Damaſcus, Damietta and Turkey, and in different countries of infidels; for trade, my lord, as you know, finds its way every where, and rules the world. Write, therefore, to the Genoeſe, and prevail on the king to do ſo likewiſe, in a friendly manner, promiſing them great rewards if they will undertake the buſineſs; for there is nothing but may be accompliſhed with money. The king of Cyprus, who is near to Turkey, and now at peace with the ſultan, may alſo aſſiſt in the matter. You muſt ſuppoſe that, as for myſelf, I will exert my powers to the utmoſt, for I am bound to obey you in every thing.'

The duke and ducheſs of Burgundy neglected no means to free their ſon from his captivity, for they were ſorely afflicted by it. He was the heir to their vaſt poſſeſſions; and this misfortune had happened to him on his firſt onſet in arms. The ladies of France lamented the loſs of their huſ-

bands

bands and friends, eſpecially the lady of Coucy, who refuſed all comfort, and bewailed him day and night. The duke of Lorraine and ſir Ferri de Lorraine, her brothers, viſited her at Saint Gobin*, where ſhe reſided, and conſoled her as well as they could. They adviſed her to ſend into Turkey to gain ſome intelligence of him, for they had heard he had greater liberty allowed him than the other priſoners.

The lady thanked her brothers for this advice, and inſtantly ſent for ſir Robert Deſne†, a good and valiant knight of the Cambreſis. She entreated him ſo ſweetly, urging him, out of affection to her, to undertake a journey into Turkey, that the knight conſented, and engaged to go thither and bring back full intelligence of the lord de Coucy.

Sir Robert ſoon made his preparations, and, accompanied by four others, ſet out for Hungary. In like manner did other ladies in France ſend to inquire after their huſbands.

The king of Hungary was very obſtinate in his refuſal to allow ſir John de Châteaumorant to continue his journey to Turkey with the preſents from the king of France to the ſultan. Though this greatly diſpleaſed ſir John and ſir James de Helly, they could not prevail on him to alter his reſolution. It happened that the grand maſter of

---

* Saint Gobin,—near la Fere in Picardy, now famous for its fine manufactory of looking glaſſes.

† Sir Robert Deſne. Sir Robert de Seu, MSS. B. M. and Harſod.

Rhodes

Rhodes came at this time to Buda. He was moſt kindly received by the king, as indeed he ought to have been, for on the day of the battle, he had ſaved the king from death or captivity. He made acquaintance with the two knights from France, who related to him the conduct of the king of Hungary, and the circumſtance of his detaining them at Buda. He was much ſurpriſed, and ſaid, to ſoften their anger, he would ſpeak to the king on the ſubject, and, as they ſhould ſoon experience, with good effect. He managed the matter ſo prudently with the king, that they were permitted to continue their journey to Turkey, with all their preſents, which were reſtored to them. The ambaſſador arrived in ſafety at the place where Bajazet reſided, owing to the paſſports ſir James de Helly had brought to him. The ſultan received the knights, and their preſents from the king of France, with much reſpect, and ſeemed very proud of what the king had ſent him.

The knights were only permitted to have one interview with the count de Nevers, but with none of the others: this, however, was of a ſufficiently long continuance. On their taking leave, the count ſaid,—'Recommend me to my lord and father, the duke of Burgundy, to my lady-mother, to my lord the king, and to my lord of Berry, and ſalute in my name all my friends. Should there be any negotiation going forward with Bajazet, urge the ſpeedy concluſion, for we ſuffer from every delay. We were originally eight priſoners, but are now increaſed, by ſixteen more, to twenty-

twenty-four*: let the ranſom include all of us, for it will be as readily agreed to for the whole as for one. Bajazet has ſettled this in his own mind, and you may depend on his ſteadineſs; and thoſe who have ſent you hither may rely on his word, for it is inviolable.' Sir James de Helly and ſir John de Châteaumorant replied, they would ſay and do every thing he had directed. They then took leave of the count de Nevers, and the ſultan, and ſet out for Hungary and France. On their return, they met the meſſenger whom they had ſent to Paris, as has been mentioned, bringing letters to the king of Hungary. They made him come back with them, as he had now no occaſion to proceed further, for they had been in Turkey; and they all returned together, to the king of France at Paris.

* The MSS. ſay *nine* orignal priſoners.

CHAP. XLVIII.

THE DUKE OF GLOCESTER PLOTS THE DESTRUCTION OF HIS NEPHEW, THE KING OF ENGLAND.—THE KING, HAVING INFORMATION OF HIS PRACTICES, HAS HIM ARRESTED BY THE EARL MARSHAL.

I HAVE been ſome time without ſaying any thing of the duke of Gloceſter, the youngeſt ſon of the late king Edward of England, for I have not had any cauſe for ſo doing. But I will now ſpeak of him, becauſe his heart would no way incline to the French, and he was more pleaſed than hurt at the melancholy loſs they had ſuſtained in Turkey. He had with him a knight called ſir John Lackingay, who was his moſt confidential adviſer, and, as it was afterwards diſcovered, held with him ſuch converſations as the following: 'Theſe vain-boaſting French have been nearly annihilated in Turkey. Such knights and ſquires as join company with them know not what they are about, and are ill adviſed when they do ſo, for they are ſo full of vanity and preſumption, that they never can bring to a ſucceſsful iſſue any thing they undertake. This has often been apparent during the wars of my lord and father, and our brother the prince of Wales, for they never could obtain a victory over our men. I know not why we have any truces with them: if it were war

with

with them, as we have good cauſe for quarrel, we would wage it now more ſucceſsfully than ever, for the flower of the French chivalry is ſlain or in captivity. Our countrymen wiſh for war, for without it they cannot exiſt, and idleneſs to men at arms is death. I ſwear, therefore by God, that if I be alive, and in health, two years hence, the war ſhall be renewed, for I will not keep any truce or peace. The French have ſhewn how little they have regarded them in former times, and have, by whatever treacherous and underhand means they could deviſe, deprived us of the duchy of Aquitaine, which was given up to my late lord and father, in conformity to a ſound treaty of peace. This I have more than once charged them with, in the conference on the other ſide of the ſea; but they made ſuch flouriſhing and complimentary ſpeeches, they always lighted on their feet, and I was not attended to either by the king or by my brothers.

'If the king of England had a good head, and were as deſirous as I am of war, and would take ſome pains to recover the inheritance they have ſhamefully ſtolen from him, he would find one hundred thouſand archers and ſix thouſand men at arms willing to croſs the ſea, and ready to ſerve him with their lives and fortunes. But things are not ſo. At this moment we have an unwarlike king, who is indifferent as to arms, otherwiſe he would ſhew himſelf in France; for there never was ſo favourable an opportunity to carry the war thither as at this preſent moment, ſince they would

be aſſured of a battle, and the people of the country, who are always eager to fight with thoſe richer than themſelves, for the ſake of the ſpoil, would venture boldly, in the hope of having the like ſucceſs with their anceſtors under the king my father, of happy memory, and my brother the prince of Wales.

'I am the laſt of the royal family of England, but, were I believed, I would be the firſt to renew the wars, to retaliate for the wrongs that have been done us, and which they are daily doing by the connivance and weakneſs of our rulers, more particularly of our head the king of England, who has allied himſelf by marriage with the daughter of his enemy the king of France. That is a ſure proof he will have no war: certainly not: he is too heavy behind, and only wiſhes for the pleaſures of the table and the amuſements of ladies. That is not the life for men at arms, who are deſirous of renown and profit. I have not forgotten my laſt expedition through France. I might have had with me about two thouſand lances and eight thouſand archers. When we croſſed the ſea, we entered France by way of Calais, and continued our march through the country, without meeting any one to oppoſe us or offer us battle.'

'Such formerly was the ſucceſs of ſir Robert Knolles, ſir Hugh Calverley, ſir Thomas Grandſon, ſir Philip Gifford, but they had not as many men as I had under their command, and yet they marched to the gates of Paris, and demanded battle from the king of France. No one, however, ven-

ventured out to anſwer their challenge, and they continued their route without interruption into Brittany. You might then have marched from Calais to Bordeaux, without any one daring to oppoſe you; but I am perſuaded whoever ſhould now attempt it would be combated; for he who at preſent ſigns himſelf king of France is young, active, and has a ſtrong deſire to achieve ſome gallant enterpriſe. He would therefore fight with us, whatever might be the conſequences, and that is every thing we could deſire; for it has been by battle and victories over the French, who are ſo rich, that we are become wealthy: if peace continue, we ſhall languiſh and become more enervated than ever, ſince my nephew came to the throne of England. Things cannot long remain in this ſtate, before the people will perceive and redreſs them. The king raiſes heavy taxes on the merchants, who are greatly diſcontented: he ſquanders the money no one knows how, and thus is the kingdom of England impoveriſhed. True it is, that he gives largely to thoſe about him, and in whom he confides, but the people pay for this, and it will ſhortly cauſe a rebellion; for they already begin to murmur, and to ſay publicly that ſuch meaſures muſt not longer be ſuffered.

'The king gives out that as ſoon as the truces between France and England ſhall be ſigned, he will make a voyage to Ireland, and employ there his men at arms and archers. He has already been there, and gained but little, for Ireland is not worth conquering: the Iriſh are a poor and

wicked people, with an impoveriſhed country; and he who ſhould conquer it one year, would loſe it the next. Lackingay, Lackingay! all you have juſt heard me ſay conſider as truth.'

Such were the converſations, as it was afterwards known, between the duke of Gloceſter and his knight. He had conceived a great hatred to his nephew, the king of England, and could no way ſpeak well of him; and although he was, with his brother of Lancaſter, the greateſt perſonage in England, and one by whoſe advice the government ought to have been carried on, he paid not any attention to it. When the king ſent for him, if it was his pleaſure he would come, but more frequently he ſtaid at home; and, when he obeyed, he was always the laſt to come and the firſt to depart. On giving his opinion, it muſt be implicitly followed, for he would not ſuffer it to be contradicted. He then took leave, mounted his horſe, and ſet off for a handſome caſtle he had in Eſſex, thirty miles from London, called Pleſhy, where he reſided more conſtantly than any where elſe.

This lord Thomas was a great lord, and could afford to expend annually, from his income, ſixty thouſand crowns. He was duke of Gloceſter, earl of Eſſex and Buckingham, and conſtable of England; and, from his rough manner, was more dreaded by the king than any other of his uncles, for, in his ſpeech, he never ſpared him. The king was always ſubmiſſive to him, and whatever he aſked was inſtantly granted. The duke of Gloceſter

ceſter had ordered many ſevere and haſty executions in England, and, without any title of reaſon or juſtice, had cauſed that prudent and gallant knight ſir Simon Burley to be beheaded, with many others of the king's council.

This duke likewiſe cauſed the baniſhment of the archbiſhop of York and the duke of Ireland from England, notwithſtanding the confidence the king repoſed in them, accuſing them of giving evil counſel to the king, keeping him under their governance, and waſting the revenues of the kingdom on themſelves. The duke of Gloceſter's two brothers of Lancaſter and York reſided generally with the king: he was jealous of them, and ſaid to ſeveral (ſuch as Robert* biſhop of London and others) who went to viſit him at his caſtle of Pleſhy, that his brothers were too expenſive to the king, and that it would be more decent for them to live at their own houſes. The duke gained, by every poſſible means, the love of the Londoners; for he thought, if he acquired popularity with them, the reſt of England would follow their example. The duke had a nephew, ſon to his brother Lionel, duke of Clarence, who had married the daughter of Galeas, lord of Milan, and died at Aſti in Piedmont. The duke of Gloceſter would gladly have ſeen his nephew, called John earl of

* Robert Braybrook, who ſucceeded Courtnay, on his tranſlation to Canterbury, 1381, and died 1404, having been chancellor of England ſcarcely ſix months.

Gough's Pleſhy, note, p. 59.

March*, on the throne of England, and king Richard depoſed from it, ſaying he was neither worthy nor capable to hold the government of England; and this opinion he made no ſecret of to thoſe who were in his confidence.

He invited this earl of March to come and ſee him; and when at Pleſhy, he unboſomed himſelf to him of all the ſecrets of his heart, telling him that he had been ſelected for king of England; that king Richard and his queen were to be confined, but with ample proviſion for their maintenance, as long as they lived; and he earneſtly beſought his nephew to believe all he ſaid, for he ſhould make it a point to put his plans into execution, and that he was already joined by the earl of Arundel, ſir John Arundel, the earl of Warwick, and many prelates and barons of England.

The earl of March was thunderſtruck on hearing this propoſal from his uncle; but, young as he was, he diſſembled his real ſentiments, and prudently replied, to pleaſe his uncle and to get away, that he never thought of ſuch things, and they

* 'He was third ſon of Edward Mortimer earl of March, by Philippa, daughter of Lionel duke of Clarence, and was hanged 3d Henry VI. Sandford, p. 224. Froiſſart means Roger, his elder brother, ſlain in Ireland, 22d Rich. II., whoſe death Richard went over to avenge, when Henry IV. plotted to dethrone him. Ib. p. 226. This Roger was declared heir to the crown by parliament, 9th Rich. II. Leland's Collectanea, vol. i. p. 693. Froiſſart took the opportunity of the marriage of Lionel and Violanta to viſit Italy, and dwells on the ſolemnid feſtivals of the wedding.'—*Gough's Pleſhy, p.* 60.

were

were of ſuch a magnitude as to require his deliberate conſideration. The duke then, obſerving the manner of his nephew, deſired he would keep what he had ſaid very ſecret. This he promiſed faithfully to do, and, taking his leave, haſtened from him, and inſtantly went to his eſtates in Ireland: he would never liſten nor ſend any anſwer to all the propoſals his uncle made to him, excuſing himſelf honourably from taking part in them, as he foreſaw they muſt end badly.

The duke of Gloceſter employed all poſſible means to ſtir up troubles in England, and excite the Londoners againſt the king. The year that a truce had been ſigned between England and France, to laſt for thirty years, king Richard and his queen came to London, on their return from France: the duke of Gloceſter whiſpered the citizens to petition the king to aboliſh all taxes and ſubſidies which had been impoſed for the laſt twenty years, as it was reaſonable they ſhould now ceaſe, ſince a truce had been ſigned for ſo long a term, and they had been levied ſolely as war-taxes, to pay the men at arms and archers in ſupport of the war. He told the merchants, 'it was hard to pay thirteen florins out of every hundred as a tax on merchandiſe, which were ſpent in idle dances and feaſts: you pay for them, and are ſorely oppreſſed. Add to your petition a remonſtrance for the realm to be governed according to ancient cuſtom and uſages, and that whenever there ſhall be any neceſſity to raiſe money for the defence of the kingdom, you will tax yourſelves with ſuch ſums

as

as ſhall be ſatisfactory to the king and his council.'

This advice of the duke of Gloceſter was followed by the Londoners, and many of the principal towns. They collected together, and went in a body to the king at Eltham, where they demanded redreſs of what they complained of, and that all taxes which had been raiſed for the ſupport of the war ſhould be inſtantly aboliſhed. Only two of the king's uncles were preſent when the citizens preſented their petition and remonſtrance, namely, the dukes of Lancaſter and York. The king deſired they would anſwer the Londoners and the other citizens who had accompanied them, but particularly the duke of Lancaſter, who ſaid to them,—' My fair ſirs, you will now, each of you, return to your homes, and, within a month from this day, come to the palace of Weſtminſter, when the king, his nobles and prelates of the council ſhall be aſſembled, and your petition and remonſtrance be taken into conſideration. What ſhall then be thought right to maintain or aboliſh will be determined upon, and you may depend on having ſuch redreſs as ought to ſatisfy you.'

This anſwer contented ſome, but not all; for there were among them rebels attached to the duke of Gloceſter who wanted a more ſpeedy deciſion of their demands; but the dukes of Lancaſter and York appeaſed them by gentle words, and they all departed. The matter, however, did not reſt here; but at the month's end they again went to the king at Weſtminſter, who was ſurrounded by

his

his nobles and prelates. The duke of Gloceſter was now preſent, and leant much to the petitioners; but, in the anſwer which was made to them, he diſſembled his real thoughts, in order that the king, his brothers and the members of the council might not notice them.

The duke of Lancaſter replied for the king, and, addreſſing himſelf to the Londoners, as they compoſed the majority, ſaid,—'Ye citizens of London, it pleaſes my lord the king that I give an anſwer to your petition: in obedience to his command, I ſhall declare to you what the king and his council have determined upon. Ye know, that to provide againſt dangers to the kingdom, ye, as well as the other cities and towns within the realm, agreed, about ſix years ago, that a tax of thirteen per cent. ſhould be laid on all merchandiſe that was ſold, and for which the king granted to you many privileges ſuch as he will not take from you, but on the contrary may augment, if ye prove not undeſerving of the favour. But ſince ye ſeem now to turn rebellious, and draw back from what ye had willingly before agreed to, he recals his former favours; and here are his nobles and prelates, who have ſworn to ſupport him in all his lawful meaſures to the utmoſt of their power, and are now willing to continue their aid in maintaining all legal grants. Conſider, therefore, calmly, this matter, and that the ſtate of the king demands great expenſe; if his revenue is augmented one way, it is diminiſhed another; beſides, his receipts are not ſo conſiderable as they were in former times.

The

The war has involved greater coſts than were provided for. The expenſes of the ambaſſadors for the peace, on this and on the other ſide of the ſea, have called for large ſums; and thoſe for the king's marriage have been very great. Although there is now a truce between England and France, the annual charges for the garriſons of the different towns and caſtles under the obedience of the king in Gaſcony, the Bourdelois, Bayonnois and Bigorre, are very heavy. The fleet which muſt be maintained to guard our coaſts and harbours coſts a great deal. The frontiers of Scotland, and of our poſſeſſions in Ireland, muſt not be left defenceleſs, and they demand large ſums. All theſe articles, and ſeveral others relating to the ſtate of the king and country of England, annually abſorb great ſums, which the nobles and prelates underſtand and know much better than you can, who attend only to your trades and the diſpoſal of your wares. Give thanks to God that ye have peace, and conſider that no one pays that is not liable ſo to do, and carries on a trade, and that foreigners pay this tax as well as yourſelves. Ye are much better off than thoſe of France, Lombardy or other countries, where it is to be hoped your merchandiſe is carried; for they are taxed and taxed over again three or four times a-year, while ye only have a moderate duty impoſed on your wares.'

The duke of Lancaſter addreſſed them ſo mildly and calmly, that although they came thither with the worſt intentions from the machinations of others, they were ſatisfied, and the aſſembly broke up without

without making any new demand, for the deputies from the majority of the principal towns were contented with the anſwer. There were ſome who would have rejoiced to have ſeen the meeting end differently, though they did not ſhew it openly. The duke of Gloceſter returned to his caſtle of Pleſhy, perceiving that this time he was diſappointed in his expectations, and was conſtantly deviſing means of exciting diſturbances in England and cauſing a rupture with France. In this attempt, he was joined by the uncle of his ducheſs, the earl of Arundel, who was deſirous of war above all things; and they had ſucceſsfully practiſed with the earl of Warwick, ſo that he obeyed their wills.

The king of England had two brothers by his mother's ſide; the eldeſt Thomas earl of Kent; the youngeſt, a valiant knight, ſir John Holland earl of Huntingdon, and chamberlain of England. The laſt was married to a daughter of the duke of Lancaſter; and it was he who had killed the earl of Stafford's ſon, as has been mentioned in this hiſtory. The iſſue of the earl of Stafford was a young ſquire, who was under the protection and wardſhip of the duke of Gloceſter.

The earl of Huntingdon reſided chiefly at the court of his brother the king of England, and was better acquainted than any other with the intrigues of the duke of Gloceſter, from the private inquiries he made into his conduct. He was much afraid of the duke, for he knew him to be proud, cruel and paſſionate: he nouriſhed his enemy under

under his eye, for the crime he had committed on the earl of Stafford's ſon had never been forgiven. King Richard was naturally fond of his brother, and ſupported him againſt all: he ſaw with pain that his uncle of Gloceſter was his enemy, and took much trouble to form a party againſt him to force him to leave the kingdom. He and the earl of Huntingdon converſed frequently on this ſubject; during which time, the count de Saint Pol arrived in England, whither he had been ſent by the king of France to ſee his daughter, the young queen of England, how they were going on, and to cultivate affection between the two countries; for, ſince the truce had been ſigned, it was the intention of the two kings and their councils, that France and England ſhould be on the moſt friendly terms with each other, in ſpite of what their ill-wiſhers might attempt to the contrary.

The king and the earl of Huntingdon made the count de Saint Pol a hearty welcome on his arrival, as well from love to the king of France as becauſe he had married their ſiſter. At this moment, neither the dukes of Lancaſter nor of York were with the king; for they began to diſſemble with him, and to ſuſpect, from the great murmurings in many parts of England on the king's conduct, that affairs would not end well: they therefore wiſhed not to be called upon by the king or people, but left the whole to the duke of Gloceſter and his accomplices. The king of England diſcourſed very freely with the count de Saint Pol, as well on the ſtate of the country as concerning

his

his uncle the duke of Gloceſter, whom he deſcribed as very rough in his manners and rebellious in his conduct, and he related to him various inſtances of his ſlights.

The count de Saint Pol, on hearing them, was much ſurpriſed, and replied, 'that ſuch behaviour ought not longer to be borne; for, my lord,' added he, 'if you ſuffer him to go on, he will be your ruin. It is currently reported in France, that his only object is to break the truce and renew the war between France and England: by little and little he will win the hearts of the more indigent men at arms of the country, who wiſh for war rather than peace; and if ſuch perſons unite together, and hoſtilities commence, the more prudent part of the nation will not be liſtened to; for where wickedneſs and obſtinancy govern, wiſdom and common ſenſe are not heard. Take your precautions beforehand; for it is better you make your enemies afraid of you, than that you ſhould fear them.'

Theſe words of the count made a deep impreſſion on the king's mind; and, as he was continually thinking on them, he renewed the ſubject with the earl of Huntingdon, on the count de Saint Pol's return to France. The earl replied, 'My lord, our brother-in-law Saint Pol has told you the real truth, and I would adviſe you to take meaſures accordingly.'

I was informed, that about a month after the departure of the count de Saint Pol from England, the king became exceedingly unpopular: it was ru-

rumoured that the count had come to treat with the king for the reſtoration of Calais to the French. Nothing could have agitated the Engliſh more than ſuch reports; and the people were ſo uneaſy, that the Londoners went even to Pleſhy, to conſult the duke of Gloceſter on the occaſion.

The duke, inſtead of calming, excited them more by ſaying, 'he could do nothing in the buſineſs; for he was ſure the French would give all the daughters of their king, if they could recover Calais.' This anſwer made the Londoners very melancholy; and they ſaid they would ſee the king, and remonſtrate with him on the agitation the whole country was in. 'Do ſo,' replied the duke of Gloceſter: 'remonſtrate with him firmly, and make him fear you. Mark well the anſwer he ſhall give, ſo that you may repeat it to me the next time I ſee you; and, when I know his anſwer, I will then give you my advice how to act. It may be that ſome iniquitous treaties are on foot, for the earl marſhal, who is governor of Calais, has been twice at Paris, where he remained ſome time, and he was the moſt active in concluding the marriage of the king with the lady Iſabella. The French are a ſubtle race, and ſee far into conſequences: they purſue their object by degrees, and are extravagant in their promiſes and preſents to gain their ends.'

The Londoners purſued the plan they had ſettled at Pleſhy, and went to Eltham to ſpeak with the king. At that time were with him his two brothers, the earls of Kent and Huntingdon, the

earl

earl of Saliſbury, the archbiſhop of Canterbury, the archbiſhop of Dublin his confeſſor, ſir Thomas Percy, ſir William Liſle, ſir Richard Credon, ſir John Golofre, and ſeveral more, all knights of the king's chamber. The citizens remonſtrated temperately with the king: told him the cauſe of their coming, not in a haughty or harſh manner, but with courteous ſpeech, and repeated to him the reports which were ſo current throughout England.

The king was greatly aſtoniſhed at hearing them, and was much affected, though he diſſembled his feelings. He appeaſed the citizens, by declaring there was not one word of truth in all the rumours that were ſo induſtriouſly circulated: that the count de Saint Pol had come hither to amuſe himſelf, and that the king of France had alſo ſent him, out of his affection to the king and queen of England, to ſee them; but he ſwore, as God might help him, and on the faith he owed the crown of England, that no treaty of any ſort had ever been mentioned, and he was aſtoniſhed whence ſuch ſcandalous reports could have ariſen.

When the king had done ſpeaking, the earl of Saliſbury addreſſed the citizens: 'My good people of London withdraw to your homes, and be aſſured that the king and his council wiſh for nothing more than the honour and profit of England. Thoſe who have buſily ſaid the contrary have been ill adviſed, and plainly ſhew they would with pleaſure ſee the country in trouble, and the people in rebellion againſt their king. This you ought

particularly to dread, for you have before witneſſed how near you were to deſtruction, when a few wicked perſons rebelled, but were ſeverely puniſhed for it: depend upon it, that when the people are wicked, neither juſtice nor truth will be attended to.'

Theſe ſpeeches appeaſed the citizens, who were tolerably contented with what they had heard. Having taken leave of the king,, they departed, on their return to London.

The king remained at Eltham, very melancholy at the words he had heard. He retained near his perſon his two brothers, and ſuch of his friends as he had the greateſt confidence in; for he began to doubt the affection of his uncles, from obſerving they now chiefly reſided at their country ſeats. He was, in conſequence, very ſuſpicious of them, eſpecially of the duke of Gloceſter, whom he feared more than the dukes of Lancaſter and York, and kept up a conſtant guard, night and day, of one thouſand archers.

The king of England had received poſitive information that the duke of Gloceſter and the earl of Arundel had plotted to ſeize his perſon, and that of the queen, and carry them to a ſtrong caſtle, where they ſhould be confined under proper guards, but allowed ſufficiently for their table and other neceſſary expenſes. That four regents ſhould be appointed over the kingdom, of whom the dukes of Lancaſter and York were to be the chief, and have under them the government of all the northern parts, from the Thames to the

Tyne,

Tyne, and as far as the Tweed, that runs by Berwick, comprehending all Northumberland, and the borders of Scotland. The duke of Gloceſter was to have for his government London, Eſſex, and that part of the country to the mouth of the Humber, and likewiſe all the coaſt from the Thames to the water of Southampton, and weſtward comprehending Cornwall. The earl of Arundel was to have Suſſex, Kent, Surry, Berkſhire, and all the country from the Thames to Briſtol, and the river Severn, that divides England from Wales, where there are very extenſive lordſhips, with power of puniſhing by death all offenders. But their chief deſign was to find out ſome means of re-kindling the war with France; and, if the king of France wiſhed to have his daughter again, it might be done, for ſhe was ſtill very young, not more than eight years and a half old, and, perchance, when ſhe was marriageable, ſhe might repent of this connection, for ſhe was innocently, and without her being able to judge for herſelf, married, and, beſide, it was unjuſt to break off her match with the heir of Brittany; but ſhould ſhe wiſh to abide by her marriage, ſhe would in juſtice remain queen of England, and enjoy her dower, but ſhe ſhould never be the companion of the king of England. Should the king die before ſhe was of a proper age, ſhe was to be ſent back to France.

Theſe were the plans that had been concerted by many of the Engliſh, particularly the Londoners, for they hated the king, and ſeveral now repented they had checked the mobs which attacked

London from the different counties of England; for they had determined, according to their confeſſions when put to death, to murder the king, the earl of Saliſbury, the earl of Oxford, and the whole of the king's council.

Had this been done, the kingdom would ſoon have found another head; and the citizens, with the conſent of the country, and the aid of the duke of Gloceſter, (who took great pains to excite trouble and confuſion) would have ſelected a fit perſon to wear the crown, and placed the government and kingdom in a different ſtate to what it then was.

Such were the ſecret murmurings of the citizens, and others of their party, in their private meetings, the whole of which was told to the king by his ſpy; and greater blame was laid on the duke of Gloceſter for all this buſineſs than on any other perſon.

It is not to be wondered, if the king was conſiderably alarmed at the diſcovery of ſo much hatred and malice lurking againſt him. He paid greater court than ever to the duke of Gloceſter and the citizens when they came to ſee him, but all in vain. At times, the king mentioned the matter privately to the dukes of Lancaſter and York, who reſided more with him than his uncle of Gloceſter, and conſulted with them how he could avoid the machinations of the duke and his accomplices, all of which he was thoroughly acquainted with. He addreſſed his uncles, ſaying,—'My good uncles, for the love of God adviſe

me

me how to act. I am daily informed that your brother, the duke of Gloceſter, and the earl of Arundel, with others, are determined to ſeize and confine me in one of their caſtles, and that the Londoners will join them. Their plan is to allow me a ſufficiency for my ſtate, but to ſeparate my queen from me, who is but a child, and daughter to the king of France, and ſend her to ſome other place of confinement. Now, my dear uncles, ſuch cruel acts as theſe muſt not be ſuffered, if they can be prevented. You have paid me homage, and ſworn obedience to me as your ſovereign, in the preſence of your lord and father, king Edward, and my grandfather of happy memory, at the ſame time with the other barons and prelates of the realm. It is now twenty years ſince this was done; and I entreat you, therefore, from the love you bear me, and on the oaths you have taken, that you aſſiſt me on this occaſion; for every thing aſſures me the duke of Gloceſter only deſires that war be renewed with France, in ſpite of the truces which you, with us and all England, have ſworn to obſerve. In conſideration of this was my marriage concluded with the daughter of the king of France, and we wiſh to obſerve every article of the treaty moſt punctually. You know alſo, that whoever attempts to infringe this truce will commit a crime, and be liable to corporal puniſhment, as well as confiſcation of goods: you likewiſe know, that I have borne with your brother, my uncle of Gloceſter, as much as I have been able, and made light of his menaces, but in

the end they may coſt me dear. You are bound, therefore, by every tie, to give your beſt advice, ſince I require it from you.'

When the dukes of Lancaſter and of York heard their nephew thus addreſs them, and ſaw that he was in great anguiſh of heart; knowing, at the ſame time, that the greater part of what he had ſaid was ſtrictly true; they replied,—'My lord, have a little patience, and wait a ſhort time before you make any raſh reſolutions. We know that our brother of Gloceſter has the moſt paſſionate and wrong-headed temper of any man in England; but he cannot do more than man, and, if he work one way, we will counteract him another: you need not fear our brother ſo long as you ſhall follow our advice. He talks frequently of things he cannot execute; and neither he nor his abettors can break the truce which has been ſigned, nor confine you in any caſtle: we will never ſuffer it, nor that you be ſeparated from the queen; for, if he imagine ſuch things, he deceives himſelf. We therefore humbly beg you will be appeaſed, for, pleaſe God, every thing ſhall end well. Many things may be ſaid that cannot be executed, and all which a man thinketh doth not come to paſs.'

By ſuch means, the dukes calmed the king's mind; but as they foreſaw that public affairs would, from their bad management, cauſe troubles in the realm, and that the hatred between their nephew and brother was daily increaſing, to avoid being called upon by either party, they left the king's houſehold with their families, taking

leave

leave of the king for a conſiderable time, and retired to their different caſtles. The duke of Lancaſter carried with him his ducheſs, who had been ſome time the companion of the young queen of England. They took this opportunity of hunting ſtags and deer as is the cuſtom in England, and the king remained with his attendants in and about London. They afterwards, however, greatly repented having left the king; for ſuch things ſhortly happened as troubled the whole kingdom, which would not have been done had they remained with the king, for they would have more prudently adviſed than ſuch counſellors as he liſtened to.

There was not one of the king's ſervants that did not fear the duke of Gloceſter, and wiſh his death, no matter by what means. That gallant and loyal knight ſir Thomas Percy had been for a long time ſteward of the houſehold, and all the accounts paſſed officially through his hands. He noticed with grief the hatred that ſubſiſted between the king and the duke of Gloceſter, and other great barons of England.

Although he was beloved by all, he foreſaw, like a man of underſtanding, that public affairs would end badly, and in conſequence reſigned his office into the king's hands in the moſt honourable manner he could, and requeſted permiſſion to retire, which the king very unwillingly conſented to. He gave ſuch plauſible reaſons for his requeſt that another was eſtabliſhed in his place, and ſir Thomas Percy went to his own eſtate, where

he reſided. The king had about his perſon many young counſellors, who too much dreaded the duke of Gloceſter: they frequently ſaid to him,—'Very dear ſire, it is a dangerous office to ſerve you, for we have ſeen our predeceſſors, in whom you had great confidence, meet but a poor reward. That valiant knight Sir Simon Burley, ſo much beloved by your lord and father, whom God pardon! and who took ſuch pains for the accompliſhment of your firſt marriage, the duke of Gloceſter, your uncle, put ſhamefully to death, by having him publicly beheaded like a traitor. He likewiſe, as you know, had many others arbitrarily executed without your being any way able to grant them your pardon, or ſave them from their ignominious deaths. Dear ſire, we expect nothing better; for whenever your uncle cometh hither to ſee you, which is not often, we dare not raiſe our eyes from the ground nor look at any body. He eyes us from head to foot, and ſeems to think we take too much upon us from being about your perſon; and be aſſured, dear ſire, that as long as he lives, there will never be quiet in England, nor will any one attempt to do any thing good. Beſides, he publicly threatens to confine you and the queen, and keep you under ſubjection during his good pleaſure. You will be an undone king, and deſtroyed as well as us, if you do not ſpeedily take ſome ſtrong meaſures. As for the queen, ſhe need not care: ſhe is young, and daughter to the king of France, whom they dare not anger, as too many evils would reſult from it to England.

'Your

'Your uncle of Gloceſter, to make you more unpopular with your ſubjects, ſpreads abroad in London, (we have heard it) that you are unworthy to bear a crown, and to poſſeſs ſo noble an inheritance as England and its dependancies; that, when you married again, you choſe the daughter of your adverſary the king of France, for which you were very blame-worthy; and that you have debaſed the chivalry of England, and the courage of its knights, ſquires and nobles, who had ſo valiantly carried on the war againſt France, and would have continued it, enfeebled as they are, if you had not prevented them; that you have placed the kingdom in a moſt perilous ſituation, with great riſk of its deſtruction, and that it is a pity you are ſuffered, and have been ſuffered, to reign ſo long. The French ſay (as the common report runs), that you intend to lay aſide the arms of France from your arms, which cauſeth great hatred againſt you; and it is the more readily believed from the great pains you took to have the truce ſigned, which was done more through force than love, for the nobles of this country who had ſerved in theſe wars would not aſſent to it: that you have not carefully examined the treaties ſigned by king John of France and his children, which thoſe of his blood, now living, have treacherouſly infringed; and that the French, by underhand means, cauſed a renewal of war, and ſeized by uſurpation the rights of your predeceſſors, and poſſeſſed themſelves of very many towns, cities and caſtles in Aquitaine, to the great loſs of the crown of England,

hand, and all through your negligence and want of courage: that you have been afraid of your enemies, and not followed up the advantages you had in the juſtice of this quarrel, which you ſtill have as well as your anceſtors, who immediately have preceded you, ſuch as your lord and father the prince of Wales, and the good king Edward, who both took ſuch pains to augment the glory of the crown. Dear ſire, the Londoners ſay, as indeed do numbers of others (which it behoves us not to conceal longer from you) that a day ſhall come when you will be reminded of theſe things to your coſt.'

King Richard treaſured up all theſe ſpeeches in his mind, and pondered over them continually. Shortly after the departure of his two uncles of Lancaſter and York, he ſummoned up more courage than uſual, and ſaid to himſelf, that it would be better he ſhould deſtroy than be deſtroyed, and, that, within a ſhort time, he would hold his uncle of Gloceſter ſo ſecurely, he ſhould be incapable of injuring him. As he could not accompliſh this alone, he opened himſelf to thoſe moſt in his confidence.

It was to the earl marſhal, who was his couſin, and alſo earl of Nottingham, that he diſcovered his intention, and moſt minutely gave him his orders how he was to act. The earl marſhal, from the favours he had received, loved the king in preference to the duke of Gloceſter, and kept the ſecret he had been entruſted with from all but ſuch as he was forced to employ, as he could not do the whole

whole himſelf. What I am about to ſay will explain the matter.

The king, under pretence of deer-hunting, went to a palace he had at Havering at the bower, in Eſſex: it is about twenty miles from London, and as many from Pleſhy, where the duke of Gloceſter generally reſided. The king ſet out one afternoon from Havering, without many attendants, for he had left them behind with the queen at Eltham, and arrived at Pleſhy about five o'clock: the weather was very hot; and he came ſo ſuddenly to the caſtle, that no one knew of it, until the porter cried out, 'Here is the king!' The duke of Gloceſter had already ſupped, for he was very temperate in his diet, and never ſat long at dinner or ſupper. He immediately went out to meet the king in the court of the caſtle, and paid him all the reſpect due to his ſovereign, as did the ducheſs and her children.

The king entered the hall and the apartment, where the table was again laid out for the king, who ate ſome little; but he had before told the duke, 'Good uncle, have your horſes ſaddled, not all, but five or ſix, for you muſt accompany me to London, as I am to have a meeting to-morrow with the citizens; and we ſhall ſurely meet my uncles of Lancaſter and York, but I ſhall adviſe with you what anſwer to make to the Londoners' demands. Tell your houſe-ſteward to follow us with your ſervants to London, where they will find you.' The duke, ſuſpecting nothing evil intended againſt him, too eaſily conſented; and the king, having

ſoon

ſoon ſupped, roſe from table. Every thing being ready, the king took leave of the ducheſs and her children, mounted his horſe, and the duke did the ſame, attended only by three ſquires and four varlets. They took their way to Bondelay, to avoid the high road to London, and Brentwood, with the other towns through which it paſſes. They rode hard, for the king pretended impatience to get to London, and converſed all the way with the duke of Gloceſter. On their arrival at Stratford, near the Thames, where an ambuſcade had been laid, the king galloped forwards, leaving his uncle behind, on which the earl marſhal advanced to the rear of the duke, with a large body of men, and ſaid, 'I arreſt you in the king's name.' The duke was panicſtruck, for he ſaw he had been betrayed, and cried aloud after the king. I know not if the king heard him, but he did not turn back, galloping on faſter than before, and followed by his attendants.

We will now leave this matter for a ſhort time,

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIX.

THE LORD DE COUCY AND THE COUNT D'EU, CONSTABLE OF FRANCE, DIE IN TURKEY, BEFORE THE TREATY FOR THEIR DELIVERANCE IS ARRANGED.—A RANSOM IS AGREED ON FOR THE OTHER PRISONERS WHO WERE TAKEN AT THE BATTLE OF NICOPOLI.

YOU have before heard how ſir John de Châteaumorant and ſir James de Helly were ſent by the king of France and the duke of Burgundy as ambaſſadors to Bajazet, in Turkey, and of the ſucceſs of their miſſion. On their return to France they were well received by the king, the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, from the certain intelligence they had brought from the count de Nevers and his fellow-priſoners. Theſe knights told the king they thought the ſultan would readily liſten to terms for their ranſom, for they had been ſo given to underſtand by ſome of his principal adviſers, leſt the priſoners might die while in captivity, which was likely enough to happen, from the difference of air and diet, and they would not in that caſe gain any thing by them. Theſe words encouraged the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy to exert themſelves in procuring the ranſom of their ſon and heir, and they were occupied day and night in deviſing means to open negotiations with the ſultan. The ducheſs ſaid this battle of Nicopoli,

poli had been very unfortunate to her, for ſhe had loſt by it three of her brothers, who were gallant knights in arms: the firſt, the haze de Flandres, the ſecond, ſir Louis de Brézé, and the third ſir John d'Ypres: there was another brother, the youngeſt of them, who had remained at home. To ſay the truth, the ducheſs had grief enough, and it was not ſurpriſing if ſhe was melancholy, but the duke and his adviſers calmed her, by their earneſtneſs in procuring her ſon's liberty: this was not, however, ſoon done, for the diſtance and difficulty of treating with ſuch people forced them to go about the buſineſs leiſurely.

About the time I am now ſpeaking of, that gallant knight and excellent man the lord Enguerrand de Coucy, count de Soiſſons, and a potent lord in France, died at Burſay in Turkey. Sir Robert d'Eſne, who had been ſent to him by the lady de Coucy, had not advanced further than Vienna on his journey thither, when he was informed of his death. He returned with this news to France, and told it to the family of the lord de Coucy, though not to the widow, before whom he did not appear until the governor of the caſtle of Saint Gobin was ſent to ſeek the body, have it embalmed, and brought to France. It was conveyed to the abbey of Nogent near to Coucy, and received by the ducheſs of Bar, the biſhop of Laon and many abbots: there the gentle knight was buried, and thus ended the year of grace 1397.

The

The king of France and the duke of Burgundy were very active in their endeavours to abridge the captivity of their friends in Turkey, and there paſſed not a day without their having ſome converſation on the ſubject. Sir Dinde Deſponde was of all their conſultations, and ſaid the Venetian or Genoeſe merchants could alone aſſiſt them; for by means of merchandiſe, which governs every thing, and their connections with other merchants, they could paſs every where, and learn the temper of the infidel ſultans. They had great weight, particularly in Cairo, Alexandria, Damaſcus and Antioch, where they had factories, and the Saracens and Chriſtians mutually interchanged their merchandiſes. The king and the duke, therefore, made as many friends among theſe merchants as they could, and gave up all intentions of making war on the duke of Milan from the friendſhip they learnt Bajazet bore him. On the other hand, king James of Cyprus knew well, that if he could any how ſoften the anger of the ſultan, and prevail on him to accept of reaſonable terms for the ranſom of the French lords, he ſhould greatly oblige the king of France, the duke of Burgundy and the whole of the nation.

To accompliſh this, the king of Cyprus had a ſhip made of gold, curiouſly wrought, that might be worth ten thouſand ducats, which he ſent by his knights as a preſent to the ſultan Bajazet. It was beautifully worked, and was graciouſly accepted by the ſultan, who replied he would return him double its value in courteſy and affection. This anſwer, brought

brought back by the Cypriote knights, was inſtantly made known to the king of France and the duke of Burgundy by ſome merchants, who wrote to ſir Dinde that he might inform them of it. King James was wiſe in making this preſent: he dreaded the king of France, and all kings, for having murdered in the night-time his valiant brother king Peter, who had fought ſo courageouſly againſt the Saracens, and had won from them the towns of Satalia and Alexandria; and they were more afraid of him than of all the other kings or emperors in Chriſtendom.

King James had ſorely repented having committed this crime, or being preſent when it was done; and, not daring to continue in Cyprus, for the Chriſtians would have put him to a diſgraceful death, could they have caught him, he embarked on board a galley belonging to ſome Genoeſe merchants which was in the port of Nicoſia, where the murder had been done, and fled to Genoa. The Genoeſe kindly entertained him, and ſome ſay that this villainous murder had been inſtigated by them; for, ſhortly after, they entered the harbour of Famagouſta with a large fleet of galleys and men at arms, which they took poſſeſſion of, and have held by force ever ſince.

True it is, that the late king of Cyprus had a very promiſing youth for his ſon, whom he brought with him, in company with a knight who had travelled through Lombardy to Rome, the laſt time he had croſſed the ſea: this youth the Cypriotes crowned their king on the aſſaſſination of his father,

father, but he lived not long to enjoy it. On his death, the Genoeſe brought back James, whom they had crowned king, and he has reigned ever ſince in Cyprus, through the ſupport the Genoeſe give him againſt all nations.

They would never give up poſſeſſion of the town or port of Famagouſta, and are the maſters of it at this preſent moment of my writing theſe chronicles. Indeed, had the Genoeſe not held it, the Turks and Infidels would have conquered the whole of the iſland, as well as Rhodes and the other adjacent iſlands; but the Venetians and Genoeſe are their great opponents. When the laſt ſaw that the kingdom of Armenia was conquered by the Turks, they ſeized the town of Courch, that is ſituated on the ſea-ſhore, which they have kept under their governance. The Turks, were they not fearful of Courch and Pera, near Conſtantinople, would do the greateſt miſchief to all who navigate thoſe ſeas, as well as to Rhodes and the neighbouring iſlands.

It is by theſe means the frontiers of Chriſtendom are defended; but let us return to king James of Cyprus. When he found, from the baſe crime he had been guilty of, he was fallen under the diſpleaſure and hatred of every crowned head, he exerted himſelf to the utmoſt to recover their favour, and thought himſelf highly honoured by the letter the king of France had written to him. He was afraid of him, and not without reaſon, for the duke of Bourbon, uncle to the king of France, was, by right of ſucceſſion through the Luſignans,

the true heir to the throne of Cyprus. This king James, although brother to the late king, was not ſo by lawful marriage, but a baſtard, as was well known to the Genoeſe. When they gave him the crown they mutually entered into ſpecial treaties with each other; and the Genoeſe bound themſelves to defend his and his deſcendants' rights to the government againſt all claimants: in conſideration of which, they had many lordſhips and tracts of land yielded up to them in the iſland of Cyprus. Every thing they did in the defence of king James was to ſtrengthen themſelves againſt the Venetians, and to open greater markets for their trade with the Saracens, for, as factors, they have many connections with them and others of their faith. King James, through the Genoeſe, took great pains to pleaſe the king of France and his ſubjects, and it was in conſequence of this he had made Bajazet ſo very rich a preſent, which was highly pleaſing to the ſultan and his miniſters, who valued it much. It was ſuppoſed by many, that ſir Dinde Deſponde had urged on the Genoeſe in this matter, as they were very warm in their endeavours to bring about a treaty for the deliverance of the count de Nevers and the other priſoners.

The duke and ducheſs of Burgundy heard, with infinite pleaſure, that the ſultan began to tire of his priſoners, and would readily enter into a treaty for their liberty. They ſelected a valiant knight from the country of Flanders, called ſir Guiſſebreth de Linrenghen, who was regent of

Flanders

Flanders under the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, to go to Turkey and treat with Bajazet for the ranſom of the French lords. At the ſame time, they ſent for ſir James de Helly, and entreated that he would accompany their ambaſſador, becauſe he was well acquainted with the countries he was to travel through, and with the court of the ſultan, promiſing that his trouble and attention ſhould be handſomely remunerated.

Sir James, having promiſed to fulfil their commands, ſet out in company with the Flemiſh knight: on their arrival in Hungary, they waited on the king, to deliver the letters which were intruſted to them. The king received the letters and knights with joy, in compliment to the king of France: he was before acquainted with ſir James de Helly. They informed the king, the object of their miſſion to Bajazet was to treat for the releaſe of his priſoners, if he were inclined to liſten to them. The king of Hungary replied, that it would be well done if they could obtain their liberty for money: and the attempt was worth trying, for nothing could be loſt by that. He offered them every aſſiſtance in his power, of money or men, for which the knights thanked him.

They had many difficulties to encounter, before they could enter into a perſonal treaty with Bajazet; for it was firſt neceſſary that ſir James de Helly ſhould wait on the ſultan to obtain a paſſport for ſir Guiſſebreth de Linrenghen to travel through

Turkey, which having been properly made out he returned with it to Hungary. They journeyed to Turkey together; and Bajazet received the regent of Flanders with kindneſs, and liſtened to his propoſals, which formed the baſis for a treaty. At this time, there lived a Genoeſe merchant called Bartolomeo Pelegrini, in the iſland of Scio, who was univerſally eſteemed for his probity and knowledge in trade, even by Bajazet himſelf: to him ſir Dinde de Deſponde had written to intereſt himſelf in the buſineſs, that it might have a more ſpeedy termination, for they were well known to each other, and promiſed him a handſome recompenſe, if ſucceſsful in obtaining the French lords' liberty, from the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, and other lords and ladies who had friends or huſbands in the power of Bajazet. He entreated him to take upon himſelf the debt for their ranſom, however large the ſum, and to conduct the French lords to Venice, or to ſome part under the government of the Venetians; and that, the moment he ſhould be aſſured from him of their arrival thither, he would, without delay, haſten to Venice in perſon, with the amount of the ſum to repay him what he had expended. The Genoeſe merchant complied with the requeſt of ſir Dinde, as well from perſonal regard to him, as for the profit and honour he ſhould acquire by it, and for the eſteem he ſhould gain from the king of France; for, from ſuch a king, it was worth having.

From

From the information I had, I am inclined to believe that the king of Cyprus ſent ſome of his ableſt counſellors to puſh forward the negotiations with the ſultan, in compliance with the ſolicitations of the king of France and the duke of Burgundy. The lords de Mathelin and d'Amine, two great barons of Greece, and much in favour with Bajazet, interfered alſo in the matter, according to the requeſts that had been made them from France, otherwiſe they would not have troubled themſelves about it.

Turkey was an extenſive country, and not convenient to travel through, to thoſe unaccuſtomed to it: Bajazet, therefore, as ſoon as he had conſented to a treaty, reſolved that all the French priſoners ſhould be conveyed to Burſa, where the whole buſineſs ſhould be concluded. Thoſe lords were brought thither, to the amount of twenty-five; but their conductors, the Turks, treated them ſcandalouſly on the road, by beating them forward, for they had purpoſely badly mounted them, and their horſes would only go at a foot's pace: for this they were beaten by the Turks, who heard, very unwillingly, that they were to have their liberty.

On their arrival at Burſa, where the negotiators from the king of France, the duke of Burgundy, the king of Cyprus, the Venetians and Genoeſe were waiting to receive them, they had more liberty than when in the priſons of the ſultan: but, notwithſtanding it was known they were to be ranſomed,

ſomed; they were ſo cloſely guarded that they could not obtain a fourth part of their wiſhes. Among the different perſons who were at Burſa on account of the treaty, Bajazet inclined more to ſir Guiſſebreth de Linrenghen, for ſir James de Helly had told him he was regent of Flanders and the moſt confidential counſellor of the duke of Burgundy. The ſultan reſided in a handſome caſtle near Burſa, and where the negotiators went to diſcuſs matters with him: the ranſom for the twenty-five priſoners was fixed at two hundred thouſand ducats. The lords de Mathelin and d'Amine, with the Genoeſe merchant of Scio, pledged themſelves to the ſultan for the due payment of it. The count de Nevers gave his oath to the merchant, for himſelf and the reſt, that on his arrival at Venice, he would never depart thence until the whole of this ſum were paid to his ſatisfaction.

Before the treaties were concluded, the count d'Eu was ſo much weakened by ſickneſs, change of air, and diet he had not been accuſtomed to, that he departed this life at Haute-loge, where he had been confined with the other lords, who were much afflicted thereat, though they could not any way prevent it. The lord Philip d'Artois, count d'Eu and conſtable of France, was, when dead, opened and embalmed, and in this ſtate put into a coffin and carried to France, where he lies buried in the church of Saint Laurence at Eu.

When

When the ſultan Bajazet was completely ſatisfied as to the ſecurity of thoſe who had pledged themſelves for the payment of the two hundred thouſand ducats as the ranſom for the French lords, the two ambaſſadors from the duke of Burgundy were impatient to return to France, and carry the joyful news of their ſucceſs to the king and other lords ſo greatly intereſted in it. They took leave of Bajazet and thoſe of his court they were the moſt intimate with; and, as the regent of Flanders was in his favour, the gallant ſultan ordered, that twenty thouſand ducats ſhould be deducted from the two hundred thouſand he was to receive, and given to the two knights, in conſideration of the great pains they had taken to accompliſh theſe treaties.

The two knights gratefully thanked the ſultan, as they had reaſon, for his magnificent gift, and, after taking leave of the Turkiſh court and the French lords, returned to Burſa. They there left the count de Nevers and his companions, waiting the lords de Mathelin * and d'Amine, who were to come for them in their galley, and embarked on board a ſmall paſſage-galley for Mathelin. On quitting the harbour, the ſea was calm and the weather temperate; but they had not advanced far before it changed, and at length became ſo tempeſtuous that ſir Guiſſebreth, ſorely tormented by

* D. Sauvage ſuppoſes, in a marginal note, this muſt be the lord of the iſland of Mitelino, but confeſſes his ignorance of the other.

ſea-

ſea-ſickneſs, died before they could reach Mathelin. Sir James de Helly was much grieved for his loſs, and, engaging a Ventian galley, ſailed to Rhodes. He publiſhed every where the deliverance and ſpeedy arrival of the count de Nevers and his companions, to the great joy of the knights of Rhodes. On his arrival in France, he made the king, the duke and ducheſs of Burgundy, and the nation, happy by the good news he had brought. Sir James ſpoke loudly in the praiſe of his companion, ſir Guiſſebreth, and of the great pains he took to conclude the treaty.

The ſultan Bajazet, having had every thing reſpecting the ranſom of his French priſoners ſettled to his ſatisfaction, reſolved on allowing them more liberty, for indeed they were now no longer priſoners, and invited them to his preſence before the departure of the ambaſſadors, to ſhow them the magnificence of his eſtabliſhments. They were ſaid to be very grand indeed; and immenſe numbers were daily attendant on his perſon. He ſent ſome of his principal lords to invite the count de Nevers and his companions to the caſtle, where he received and entertained them handſomely: he ordered all things they might want to be delivered out to them by his officers, as was the uſual cuſtom of his court. The ſultan converſed daily with the count de Nevers, by means of an interpreter, and paid him much reſpect, for he knew that he was, or would be, a very great lord in France, by the great exertions that were made, and the large ſum

paid

paid for his ranſom, which was enough to ſatisfy his avarice, having ſecurities for the amount of one million of florins.

The other French lords were equally aſtoniſhed with the count de Nevers at the power and ſtate of Bajazet. He was attended by ſuch numbers, that they were always encamped, for no town could lodge them; and the expenſe muſt have been very great to ſupply ſo many with food. It was ſurpriſing where ſuch quantities came from, notwithſtanding the natives of warm climates are very temperate in their diet, eating but little meat, living on ſpices and ſugar, of which they have abundance, as well as goats' milk, the common beverage of the Turks and Saracens, and they have plenty of bread made of millet.

The ſultan had at this time ſeven thouſand falconers, and as many huntſmen: you may ſuppoſe from this the grandeur of his eſtabliſhments. One day, in the preſence of the count de Nevers, he flew a falcon at ſome eagles: the flight did not pleaſe him; and he was ſo wroth, that, for this fault, he was on the point of beheading two thouſand of his falconers, ſcolding them exceedingly for want of diligence in their care of his hawks, when the one he was fond of had behaved ſo ill.

Another time, when the count de Nevers and the French barons were with the ſultan, a poor woman came to him in tears, to demand juſtice againſt one of his ſervants, and ſaid,—'Sultan, I addreſs myſelf to thee, as my ſovereign, and com-

plain of one of thy ſervants, who is, I underſtand, attached to thy perſon. He this morning entered my houſe, and ſeized by force the goat milk I had provided for myſelf and children, and drank it againſt my will. I told him that I ſhould complain to thee of this outrage, but I had no ſooner uttered the words, than he gave me two great cuffs, and would not leave me, though I ordered him in thy name. Sultan, do me juſtice, as thou haſt ſworn to thy people thou wouldeſt, that I may be ſatisfied, this injury be puniſhed, and that every one may know thou wilt ſee the meaneſt of thy ſubjects righted.'

The ſultan was very rigidly determined that all crimes committed within his dominions ſhould be ſeverely puniſhed: he therefore liſtened to her attentively, and ſaid he would do her juſtice. He then ordered the varlet to be brought, and confronted with the woman, who repeated her complaint. The varlet, who dreaded Bajazet, began to make excuſes, ſaying it was all falſe. The woman told a plain tale, and perſiſted in its truth. The ſultan ſtopped her, and ſaid,—'Woman, conſider well thy accuſation; for, if I find thou haſt told me a lie, thou ſhalt ſuffer death.' 'Sir,' replied the woman, 'I conſent to it; for, were it not true, I could have no reaſon to come before thee, and I only aſk for juſtice.' 'I will do it,' anſwered the ſultan, 'for I have ſo ſworn, and indiſcriminately to every man or woman within my dominions.' He then ordered the varlet to be ſeized,

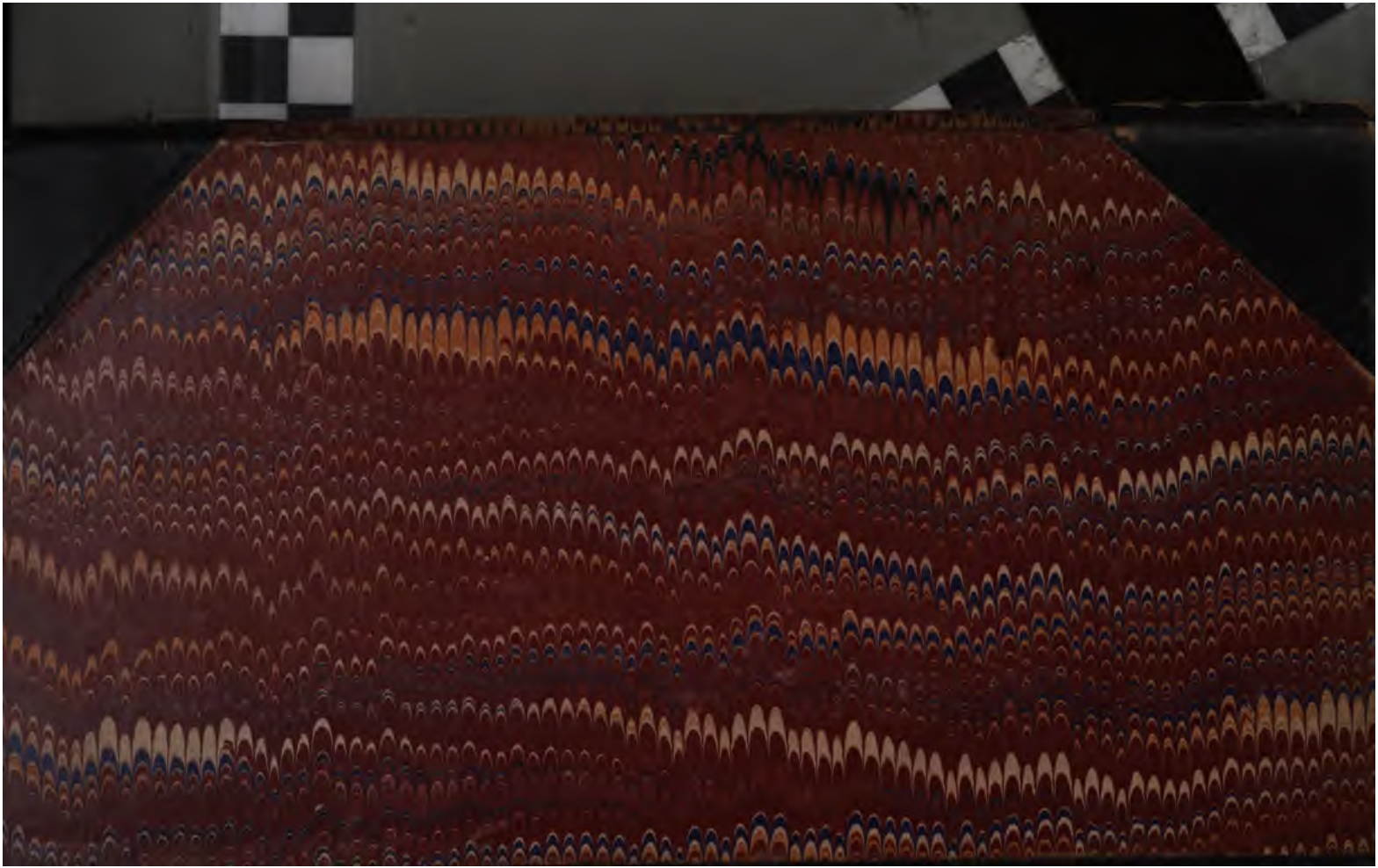
ſeized, and to have his belly opened, for otherwiſe he would not have known if he had drank the milk or not. It was there found, for it had not had time to be digeſted; and the ſultan, on ſeeing it, ſaid to the woman, 'Thou hadſt juſt cauſe of complaint: now go thy way, for the injury done thee has been puniſhed.' She was likewiſe paid for her loſs. This judgment of Bajazet was witneſſed by the French lords, who were at the time in his company.

END OF VOL. XI.

Brooke, Printer,
Paternoster Row.

Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 013 516 740

11
.F
18
v.

DATE DUE

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARI
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA
94305